



**PRESIDENT'S SECRETARIAT  
(LIBRARY)**

Accn. No. C.5.143 Class No. 240

Class No. 240

The book should be returned on or before the date  
last stamped below.



To  
The Millions

Who, amid the vexing problems of Life  
Find themselves irresistably drawn to  
The Glory of God in This New Day,

and

Yearn to know  
What the World is to be.

Presented to  
Padmaja Naidu  
by an Old Friend,

S. N. Norechi

25/11/1942 A.D.

Hyd. Dr.

## **GOD'S PURPOSE**

**Mysteriously, slowly, and resistlessly God accomplishes His design, though the sight that meets our eyes in this day be the spectacle of a world hopelessly entangled in its own meshes . . .**

**God's purpose is none other than to usher in, in ways He alone can bring about, and the full significance of which He alone can fathom,—the Great, the Golden Age—of a long-divided, a long-afflicted humanity. Its present state, indeed even its immediate future, is dark, distressingly dark. Its distant future, however, is radiant, gloriously radiant—so radiant that no eye can visualize it.**

“ That which the Lord hath ordained as the sovereign remedy and mightiest instruments for the healing of all the world is the union of all its peoples in one universal Cause, one common Faith. This can in no wise be achieved except through the power of a skilled, an all-powerful and inspired Physician. . . . Soon will the present-day order be rolled up, and a new one spread out in its stead. This, verily, is the Truth, and all else naught but error. Verily, thy Lord speaketh the Truth, and is the knower of things unseen.”

—BAHA’U’LLAH.

“THE WORLD'S EQUILIBRIUM HATH BEEN UPSET  
THROUGH THE VIBRATING INFLUENCE OF THIS MOST  
GREAT, THIS NEW WORLD ORDER. MANKIND'S ORDERED  
LIFE HATH BEEN REVOLUTIONIZED THROUGH THE AGENCY  
OF THIS UNIQUE, THIS WONDROUS SYSTEM—THE LIKE OF  
WHICH MORTAL EYES HAVE NEVER WITNESSED.”

—BAHA'U'LLAH.

“ All nations and kindreds . . . will become a single nation. Religious and sectarian antagonism, the hostility of races and peoples, and differences among nations, will be eliminated. All men will adhere to one religion, will have one common faith, will be blended into one race, and become a single people. All will dwell in one common fatherland, which is the planet itself.”

—'Abdu'l-Baha.

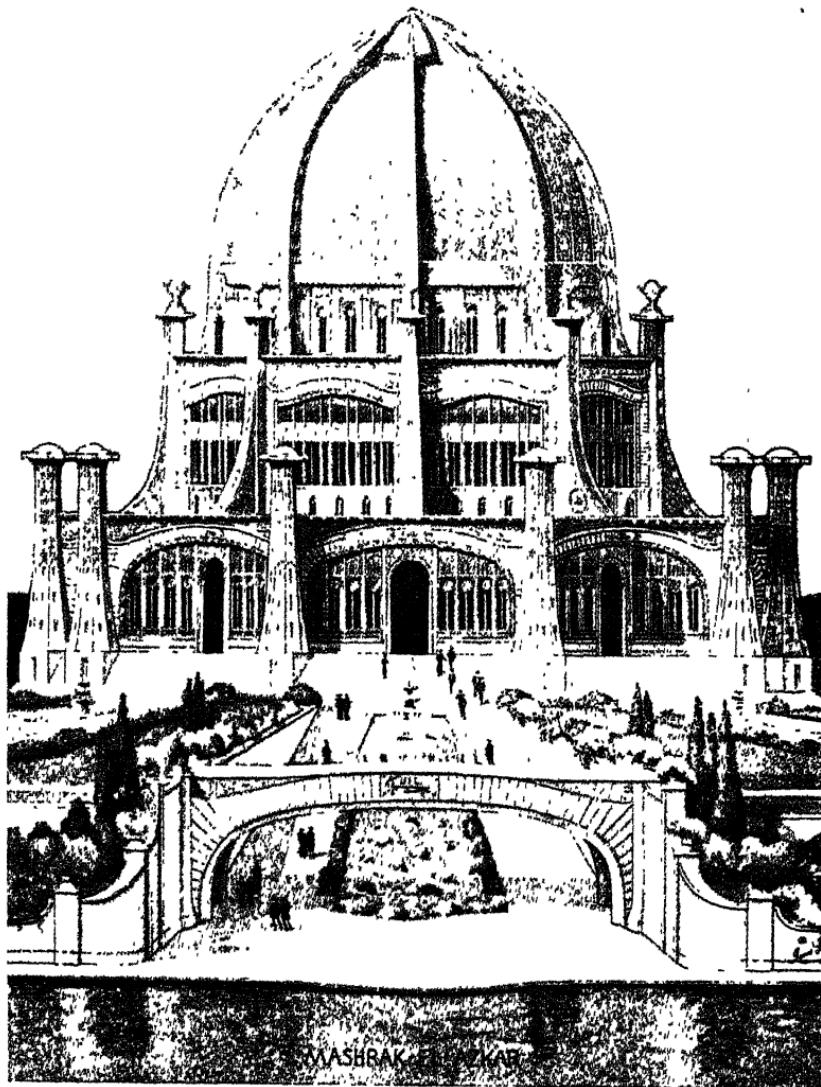


SUSAN STEWART WALKER ©

THE GREATEST NAME

*Ya-Baha'u'l-Abha*

(" O Thou the Glory of Glories ")



THE BAHAI' HOUSE OF WORSHIP  
Wilmette, Chicago, U. S. A.

“ We have commanded the Most Great Peace, which is the greatest means for the protection of mankind. The Rulers of the world must, in one accord, adhere to this command which is the main cause for the security and tranquillity of the world.”

—*Baha'u'llah.*

“ America is a noble nation, a standard-bearer of peace throughout the world, shedding her light to all regions. Other nations are not untrammelled and free of intrigues like the United States, and are unable to bring about Universal Peace. But America, thank God, is at peace with all the world, and is worthy of raising the flag of brotherhood and International Peace. When the summons to International Peace is raised by America, all the rest of the world will cry: “**Yes, we accept.**” The nations of every clime will join in adopting the teaching of Baha'u'llah, revealed over fifty years ago\*. In His Epistles He asked the parliaments of the world to send their best and wisest men to an international world-parliament that should decide all questions between the peoples and establish peace . . . then we shall have the Parliament of Man of which the prophets have dreamed.”

\* 'Abdu'l-Baha's Speech at Cincinnati, Ohio, on November 5th, 1912.

## THE CRITICAL HOUR OF THE WORLD.

Never indeed have there been such wide-spread and basic upheavals, whether in the social, economic or political spheres of human activity as those now going on in different parts of the world. Never have there been so varied and many sources of danger as those that now threaten the structure of society. The following words of Baha'u'llah are indeed significant as we pause to reflect upon the present state of a strangely disordered world :—

*“ How long will humanity persist in its waywardness ? How long will injustice continue ? How long is chaos and confusion to reign amongst men ? How long will discord agitate the face of society ? The winds of despair are, alas, blowing from every direction and the strife that divides and afflicts the human race is daily increasing. The signs of impending chaos and convulsions can now be discerned, inasmuch as the prevailing order appears to be lamentably defective ” . . . .*

Might there not emerge out of the agony of a shaken world a religious revival of such scope and power as to even transcend the potency of those world-directing forces with which the Religions of the Past have, at fixed intervals and according to an inscrutable Wisdom, revived the fortunes of declining ages and peoples ? Might not the bankruptcy of this present, this highly-vaunted materialistic civilization, in itself clear away the choking weeds that now hinder the unfoldment and future efflorescence of God's struggling Faith ?

To claim to have grasped all the implications of Baha'u'llah's prodigious scheme for world-wide human solidarity, or to have fathomed its import, would be presumptuous on the part of even the declared supporters of His Faith. To attempt to visualize it in all its possibilities, to estimate its future benefits, to picture its glory, would be premature at even so advanced a stage in the evolution of mankind.

All we can reasonably venture to attempt is to strive to obtain a glimpse of the first streaks of the promised Dawn that must, in the fulness of time, chase away the gloom that has encircled humanity. All we can do is to point out, in their broadest outlines, what appears to us to be the guiding principles underlying the World-Order of Baha'u'llah, as amplified by 'Abdu'l-Baha the appointed Interpreter and Expounder of His Word.

—SHOGHI EFFENDI.



We desire but the good of the world and the happiness of the nations ; yet they deem us a stirrer up of strife and sedition worthy of bondage and banishment . . . that all nations should become one in faith and all men as brothers ; that the bonds of affection and unity between the sons of men should be strengthened ; that diversity of religion should cease, and differences of race be annulled. . . . What harm is there in this ? . . . Yet so it shall be ; these fruitless strifes, these ruinous wars shall pass away, and the "Most Great Peace" shall come. . . . Is not this that which Christ foretold ? . . . Yet do We see your kings and rulers lavishing their treasures more freely on means for the destruction of the human race than on that which would conduce to the happiness of mankind. These strifes and this bloodshed and discord must cease, and all men be as one kindred and one family. . . . Let not a man glory in this, that he loves his country ; let him rather glory in this, that he loves his kind.

—BAHA'U'LLAH.



Now is the time ! Now is the accepted time ! Look ye at the time of Christ ; had the people realized that the Holy Spirit of God was speaking to them through His divine mouth they would not have waited three centuries before accepting Him. And now is it meet for you that ye are sleeping upon the beds of idleness and neglect, while the Father foretold by Christ has come amongst us and opened the greatest door of bounteous gifts and divine favors ? Let us not be like those in past centuries who were deaf to His call and blind to His beauty ; but let us try and open our eyes that we may see Him, and open our ears that we may hear Him, and cleanse our hearts that He may come and abide in our temples.

—'ABDU'L-BAHA.



“The gift of God to this enlightened age is the knowledge of the Oneness of Mankind, the fundamental oneness of Religion. Wars shall cease between nations, and by the will of God, the Most Great Peace shall come ; the world will be seen as a new world, and all men shall live as brothers.

The cause of Baha'u'llah is the same as the Cause of Christ. It is the same temple and the same foundation . . . In the coming of Christ, the divine teachings were given in accordance with the infancy of the human race. The teachings of Baha'u'llah have the same basic principles, but are according to the stage of the maturity of the world and the requirements of this illumined age.”—‘ABDU’L-BAHA.

### THE DIVINE POLICY

“The difference which exists among the nations and the peoples is soon to pass away, and the fundamentals of the divine religions, which are no other than the solidarity and the oneness of the human race, are to be established . . . The Divine policies shall rule, for the Divine policy is the oneness of the human world. God is kind to all. He considers all as His servants. He does not exclude anybody, and the policy of God is the correct and just policy. No matter how complete human policy and foresight be, it is imperfect. If we do not emulate the policy of God, or if we refuse to follow His dictates, that will be a presumptive evidence of our saying, as it were, that we know better than God ; that we are knowing and wise, whereas God is ignorant ; that we are sagacious and God is not, God forbid ! . . . No matter how far the human intelligence shall advance, it is still as a drop, whereas the Divine Omniscience is the very Ocean.”—‘ABDU’L-BAHA.

“There is one God ; mankind is one ; the foundations of religion are one. Let us worship Him, and give praise for all His great Prophets and Messengers who have manifested His brightness and glory.

Truth is one and without division. The teachings of Jesus are in a concentrated form. Men do not agree to this day as to the meaning of many of His sayings. His teachings are as a flower in the bud. Today the bud is unfolding into a flower. Baha'u'llah has expanded and fulfilled the teachings, and has applied them in detail to the whole world.”—‘ABDU’L-BAHA.

“The day is soon coming whereon they will cry out for help and will receive no answer.”

—BAHA’U’LLAH.



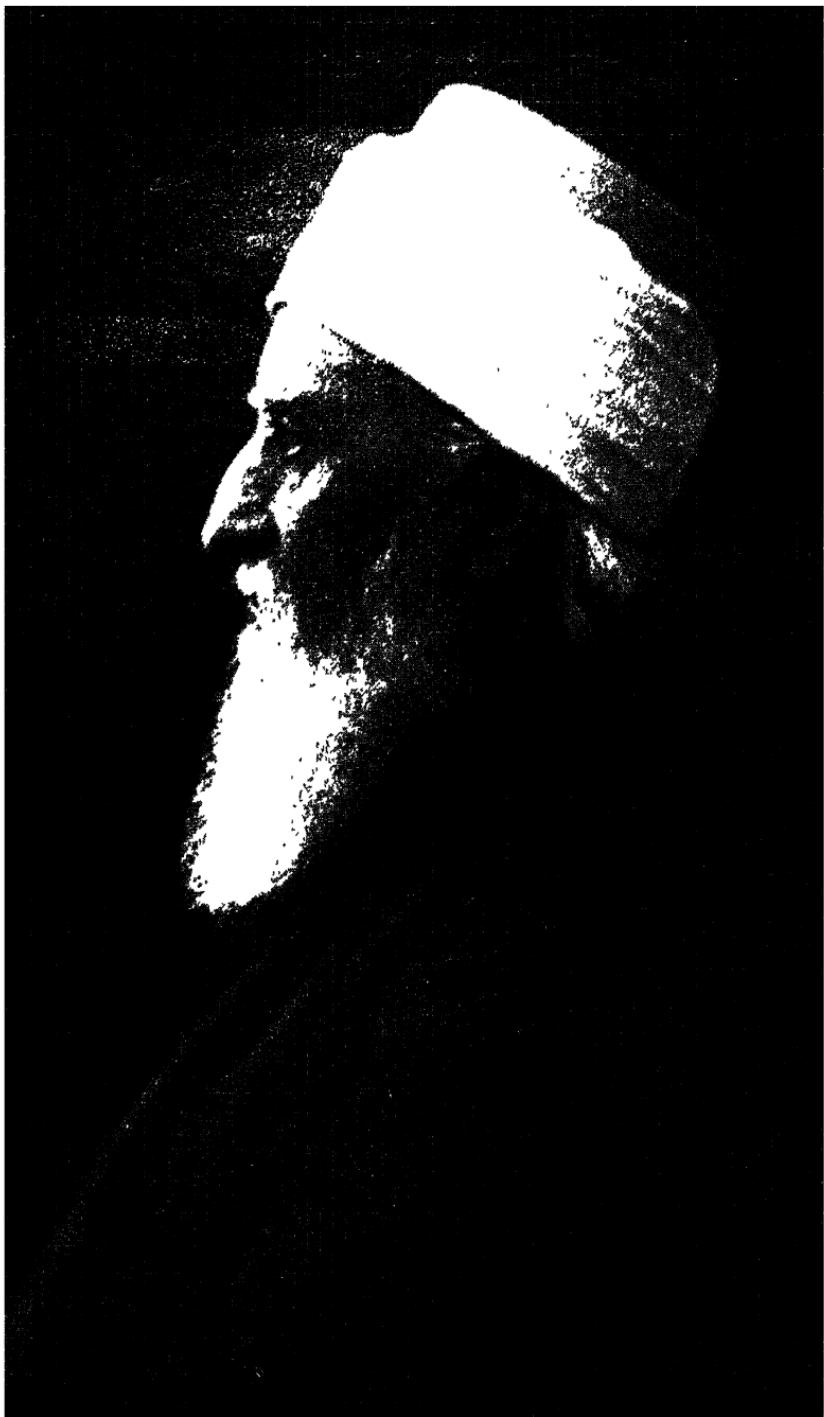
“There will be no place to flee to,  
no refuge to seek except Him.”

—BAHA’U’LLAH.



“*And when the appointed hour is come,  
there shall suddenly appear that which shall  
cause the limbs of mankind to quake.*”

—BAHA’U’LLAH.



# THE PROMISED DAY IS COME

BY  
SHOGHI EFFENDI

“GLORY IS NOT HIS, WHO LOVES HIS NATIVE LAND,  
BUT GLORY IS HIS, WHO LOVES HIS KIND.”

BAHA'U'LLAH.

PUBLISHED BY  
THE BAHAI ASSEMBLY OF BOMBAY  
BOMBAY.

1942.

PRINTED IN AMERICA—1941

FIRST RE-PRINTED IN INDIA—MARCH 1942

(*ALL RIGHTS RESERVED*)

TIMES OF INDIA PRESS  
BOMBAY

1942.

THE Author has placed no footnotes in the original book as published in America. The publishers hope these would be found helpful by the general reader, though no authority attaches to them. Some misprints and a few inadvertent errors may have crept in : these would be obvious to the well informed reader.

THE PUBLISHERS.

*This book can be had of*  
BAHAI PUBLISHING COMMITTEE,  
CORNER HOUSE, CAMP, KARACHI,  
AND  
PRINCIPAL BOOKSELLERS THROUGHOUT INDIA.



## PUBLISHER'S NOTE.

Two reasons have prompted me to publish this Indian reprint of the greatest book of these times, which appeared recently in America. Owing to the war, only nine copies reached India. Those, who have read this momentous book here, acclaimed with one voice that it should be made available in India also. The second reason which inspired me to undertake this labour of love is that the learned author of this book had written to me, in another connection, on 13th August, 1941, as under:—

*“The field of India is very wide and its people vast and in great need of the enlightening Message of BAHA’U’LLAH. The all important task of the Baha’is of that country is to see that their fellow-citizens are not deprived of the Divine Light in these dark and grievous times, and to spread the Cause far and wide—before the misery of the war hampers their activities or plunges people into too hopeless a state to respond to anything, even the truth.”*

The learned author’s great grandfather, Baha’u’llah, was equally anxious to see the people of India instructed in Baha’i lore. He sent to India, some 70 years ago, Jamal Effendi, a well-known Baha’i teacher from Iran. This zealous teacher soon succeeded in winning the hearts of Indians of all classes, from princes down to peasants. The spread of Baha’i light grew more intense with the advent of Irani Baha’is in the eighties of the 19th century. These staunch Baha’is made splendid efforts for diffusing Baha’i light in India: their success is evident by the fact that this message has reached you today.

As an humble, yet faithful, member of the Baha’i Faith, I have undertaken this task with the full hope that the intelligent Indian public may be enlightened, *in time*, about the coming events which have already cast their shadows all over the World.

Those, who know nothing about the Baha’i Faith, will do well to read first the Supplement at the end before they begin to peruse “The Promised Day is Come.”

Mehta House, Apollo Street,  
Bombay, 21st March 1942.

MANI H. M. MEHTA, *President,*  
The Baha’i Assembly of Bombay.

**“Is there any remover of difficulties save  
God! All are His servants and all are stand-  
ing by His Orders.”**

BAB. (THE HERALD)



Is not the object of every Revelation to effect a transformation in the whole character of mankind, a transformation that shall manifest itself, both outwardly and inwardly, that shall affect both its inner life and external condition? For if the character of mankind be not changed, the futility of God's universal Manifestation would be apparent.

—BAHA'U'LLAH.

(THE FOUNDER)



His Holiness Baha'u'llah has revoiced and re-established the quintessence of the teachings of all the Prophets . . . These holy words and teachings are the remedy for the body-politic, the divine prescription and the real cure for the disorders which afflict the World.

—'ABDU'L-BAHA. (THE PROMOTER)



“How vast is the Revelation of Baha'u'llah! How great the magnitude of His blessings showered upon humanity in this day! And yet how poor, how inadequate our conception of their significance and glory! This generation stands too close to so colossal a Revelation to appreciate, in their full measure, the infinite possibilities of His Faith, the unprecedented character of His Cause, and the mysterious dispensations of His Providence.”

—SHOGI EFFENDI.

(THE GUARDIAN)

# THE PROMISED DAY IS COME

A tempest, unprecedented in its violence, unpredictable in its course, catastrophic in its immediate effects, unimaginably glorious in its ultimate consequences, is at present sweeping the face of the earth. Its driving power is remorselessly gaining in range and momentum. Its cleansing force, however much undetected, is increasing with every passing day. Humanity, gripped in the clutches of its devastating power, is smitten by the evidences of its resistless fury. It can neither perceive its origin, nor probe its significance, nor discern its outcome. Bewildered, agonized and helpless, it watches this great and mighty wind of God invading the remotest and fairest regions of the earth, rocking its foundations, deranging its equilibrium, sundering its nations, disrupting the homes of its peoples, wasting its cities, driving into exile its kings, pulling down its bulwarks, uprooting its institutions, dimming its light, and harrowing up the souls of its inhabitants.

*“The time for the destruction of the world and its people,”* Bahá’u’lláh’s prophetic pen has proclaimed, *“hath arrived.”* *“The hour is approaching,”* He specifically affirms, *“when the most great convulsion will have appeared.”* *“The promised day is come, the day when tormenting trials will have surged above your heads, and beneath your feet, saying: ‘Taste ye what your hands have wrought!’”* *“Soon shall the blasts of His chastisement beat upon you, and the dust of hell enshroud you.”* And again: *“And when the appointed hour is come, there shall suddenly appear that which shall cause the limbs of mankind to quake.”* *“The day is approaching when its (civilization) flame will devour the cities, when the Tongue of Grandeur will proclaim: ‘The Kingdom is God’s, the Almighty, the All-Praised!’”* *“The day will soon come,”* He, referring to the foolish ones of the earth, has written, *“whereon they will cry out for help and receive no answer.”* *“The day is approaching.”* He moreover has prophesied, *“when the wrathful*

anger of the Almighty will have taken hold of them. He, verily, is the Omnipotent, the All-Subduing, the Most Powerful. He shall cleanse the earth from the defilement of their corruption, and shall give it for an heritage unto such of His servants as are nigh unto Him."

"As to those who deny Him Who is the Sublime Gate of God," the Báb, for His part, has affirmed in the Qayyúmu'l-Asmá', "for them We have prepared, as justly decreed by God, a sore torment. And He, God, is the Mighty, the Wise." And further, "O peoples of the earth! I swear by your Lord! Ye shall act as former generations have acted. Warn ye, then, yourselves of the terrible, the most grievous vengeance of God. For God is, verily, potent over all things." And again: "By My glory! I will make the infidels to taste, with the hands of My power, retributions unknown of any one except Me, and will waft over the faithful those musk-scented breaths which I have nursed in the midmost heart of My throne."

Dear friends! The powerful operations of this titanic upheaval are comprehensible to none except such as have recognized the claims of both Bahá'u'lláh and the Báb. Their followers know full well whence it comes, and what it will ultimately lead to. Though ignorant of how far it will reach, they clearly recognize its genesis, are aware of its direction, acknowledge its necessity, observe confidently its mysterious processes, ardently pray for the mitigation of its severity, intelligently labor to assuage its fury, and anticipate, with undimmed vision, the consummation of the fears and the hopes it must necessarily engender.

## This Judgment of God

This judgment of God, as viewed by those who have recognized Bahá'u'lláh as His Mouthpiece and His greatest Messenger on earth, is both a retributory calamity and an act of holy and supreme discipline. It is at once a visitation from God and a cleansing process for all mankind. Its fires punish the perversity of the human race, and weld its component parts into one organic, indivisible, world-

embracing community. Mankind, in these fateful years, which at once signalize the passing of the first century of the Bahá'í Era<sup>1</sup> and proclaim the opening of a new one, is, as ordained by Him Who is both the Judge and the Redeemer of the human race, being simultaneously called upon to give account of its past actions, and is being purged and prepared for its future mission. It can neither escape the responsibilities of the past, nor shirk those of the future. God, the Vigilant, the Just, the Loving, the All-Wise Ordainer, can, in this supreme Dispensation, neither allow the sins of an unregenerate humanity, whether of omission or of commission, to go unpunished, nor will He be willing to abandon His children to their fate, and refuse them that culminating and blissful stage in their long, their slow and painful evolution throughout the ages, which is at once their inalienable right and their true destiny.

“*Bestir yourselves, O people,*” is, on the one hand, the ominous warning sounded by Bahá'u'lláh Himself, “*in anticipation of the days of Divine Justice, for the promised hour is now come.*” “*Abandon that which ye possess, and seize that which God, Who layeth low the necks of men, hath brought. Know ye of a certainty that if ye turn not back from that which ye have committed, chastisement will overtake you on every side, and ye shall behold things more grievous than that which ye beheld aforetime.*” And again: “*We have fixed a time for you, O people! If ye fail, at the appointed hour, to turn towards God, He, verily, will lay violent hold on you, and will cause grievous afflictions to assail you from every direction. How severe indeed is the chastisement with which your Lord will then chastise you!*” And again: “*God assuredly dominateth the lives of them that wronged Us, and is well aware of their doings. He will most certainly lay hold on them for their sins. He, verily, is the fiercest of Avengers.*” And finally, “*O ye peoples of the world! Know verily that an unforeseen calamity is following you and that grievous retribution awaiteth you. Think not the deeds ye have committed have been blotted from My sight. By My Beauty! All your doings, hath My pen graven with open characters upon tablets of chrysolite.*”

1. 1844 to 1944 A.D.

*“The whole earth,”* Bahá’u’lláh, on the other hand, forecasting the bright future in store for a world now wrapt in darkness, emphatically asserts, *“is now in a state of pregnancy. The day is approaching when it will have yielded its noblest fruits, when from it will have sprung forth the loftiest trees, the most enchanting blossoms, the most heavenly blessings.”* *“The time is approaching when every created thing will have cast its burden. Glorified be God Who hath vouchsafed this grace that encompasseth all things, whether seen or unseen!”* *“These great oppressions,”* He, moreover, foreshadowing humanity’s golden age, has written, *“are preparing it for the advent of the Most Great Justice.”* This Most Great Justice is indeed the Justice upon which the structure of the Most Great Peace can alone, and must eventually, rest, while the Most Great Peace will, in turn usher in that Most Great, that World Civilization which shall remain for ever associated with Him Who beareth the Most Great Name.

Beloved friends! Well-nigh a hundred years<sup>1</sup> have elapsed since the Revelation of Bahá’u’lláh dawned upon the world—a Revelation, the nature of which, as affirmed by Himself, *“none among the Manifestations of old, except to a prescribed degree, hath ever completely apprehended.”* For a whole century God has respited mankind, that it might acknowledge the Founder of such a Revelation, espouse His Cause, proclaim His greatness, and establish His Order. In a hundred volumes, the repositories of priceless precepts, mighty laws, unique principles, impassioned exhortations, reiterated warnings, amazing prophecies, sublime invocations, and weighty commentaries, the Bearer of such a Message has proclaimed, as no Prophet before Him has done, the Mission with which God had entrusted Him. To emperors, kings, princes and potentates, to rulers, governments, clergy and peoples, whether of the East or of the West, whether Christian, Jew, Muslim, or Zoroastrian, He addressed, for well-nigh fifty years,<sup>2</sup> and in the most tragic circumstances, these priceless pearls of knowledge and wisdom that lay hid within the ocean of His matchless utterance. Forsaking fame and fortune, accept-

---

1. Since 1894 A.D.

2. 1844 to 1892 A.D.

ing imprisonment and exile, careless of ostracism and obloquy, submitting to physical indignities and cruel deprivations, He, the Vice-gerent of God on earth, suffered Himself to be banished from place to place and from country to country, till at length He, in the Most Great Prison, offered up His martyred son<sup>1</sup> as a ransom for the redemption and unification of all mankind. “*We verily,*” He Himself has testified, “*have not fallen short of Our duty to exhort men, and to deliver that whereunto I was bidden by God, the Almighty, the All-Praised. Had they hearkened unto Me, they would have beheld the earth another earth.*” And again: “*Is there any excuse left for any one in this Revelation? No, by God, the Lord of the Mighty Throne! My signs have encompassed the earth, and My power enveloped all mankind, and yet the people are wrapped in a strange sleep!*”

## What Response to His Call?

How—we may well ask ourselves—has the world, the object of such Divine solicitude, repaid Him Who sacrificed His all for its sake? What manner of welcome did it accord Him, and what response did His call evoke? A clamor, unparalleled in the history of Shi‘ih Islám, greeted, in the land of its birth,<sup>2</sup> the infant light of the Faith, in the midst of a people notorious for its crass ignorance, its fierce fanaticism, its barbaric cruelty, its ingrained prejudices, and the unlimited sway held over the masses by a firmly entrenched ecclesiastical hierarchy. A persecution, kindling a courage which, as attested by no less eminent an authority than the late Lord Curzon of Kedleston, has been unsurpassed by that which the fires of Smithfield evoked, mowed down, with tragic swiftness, no less than twenty thousand of its heroic adherents, who refused to barter their newly-born faith<sup>3</sup> for the fleeting honors and security of a mortal life.

To the bodily agonies inflicted upon these sufferers, the charges, so unmerited, of Nihilism, occultism,

1. The son of Bahá'u'lláh named Mirzá Mehdi.

2. Iran.

3. The Bahá'í Faith.

anarchism, eclecticism, immorality, sectarianism, heresy, political partisanship—each conclusively disproved by the tenets of the Faith itself and by the conduct of its followers—were added, swelling thereby the number of those who, unwittingly or maliciously, were injuring its cause.

Unmitigated indifference on the part of men of eminence and rank; unrelenting hatred shown by the ecclesiastical dignitaries of the Faith from which it had sprung; the scornful derision of the people among whom it was born; the utter contempt which most of those kings and rulers who had been addressed by its Author<sup>1</sup> manifested towards it; the condemnations pronounced, the threats hurled, and the banishments decreed by those under whose sway it arose and first spread; the distortion to which its principles and laws were subjected by the envious and the malicious, in lands and among peoples far beyond the country of its origin—all these are but the evidences of the treatment meted out by a generation sunk in self-content, careless of its God, and oblivious of the omens, prophecies, warnings and admonitions revealed by His Messengers.

The blows so heavily dealt the followers of so precious, so glorious, so potent a Faith failed, however, to assuage the animosity that inflamed its persecutors. Nor did the deliberate and mischievous misrepresentations of its fundamental teachings, its aims and purposes, its hopes and aspirations, its institutions and activities, suffice to stay the hand of the oppressor and the calumniator, who sought by every means in their power to abolish its name and extirpate its system. The hand which had struck down so vast a number of its blameless and humble lovers and servants was now raised to deal its Founders<sup>2</sup> the heaviest and cruellest blows.

The Báb—“*the Point*” as affirmed by Bahá'u'lláh, “*round Whom the realities of the Prophets and Messengers revolve*”—was the One first swept into the maelstrom which engulfed His supporters. Sudden arrest and confinement in the very first year of His short and spectacular

1. Bahá'u'lláh.

2. Bab and Bahá'u'lláh.

career ; public affront deliberately inflicted in the presence of the ecclesiastical dignitaries of Shíráz ; strict and prolonged incarceration in the bleak fastnesses of the mountains of Adhirbáyján ; a contemptuous disregard and a cowardly jealousy evinced respectively by the Chief Magistrate of the realm and the foremost minister of his government ; the carefully staged and farcical interrogatory sustained in the presence of the heir to the Throne and the distinguished divines of Tabríz ; the shameful infliction of the bastinado in the prayerhouse, and at the hands of the Shaykhú'l-Islám of that city ; and finally suspension in the barrack-square of Tabríz and the discharge of a volley of above seven hundred bullets at His youthful breast under the eyes of a callous multitude of about ten thousand people, culminating in the ignominious exposure of His mangled remains on the edge of the moat without the city gate—these were the progressive stages in the tumultuous and tragic ministry of One Whose age inaugurated the consummation of all ages, and Whose Revelation fulfilled the promise of all Revelations.

“ *I swear by God!*” the Báb Himself in His Tablet to Muhammad Sháh has written, “ *Shouldst thou know the things which in the space of these four years have befallen Me at the hands of thy people and thine army, thou wouldest hold thy breath from fear of God. . . . Alas, alas, for the things which have touched Me! I swear by the Most Great Lord! Wert thou to be told in what place I dwell, the first person to have mercy on Me would be thyself. In the heart of a mountain is a fortress (Mákú)<sup>1</sup> . . . the inmates of which are confined to two guards and four dogs. Picture, then, My plight. . . . In this mountain I have remained alone, and have come to such a pass that none of those gone before Me have suffered what I have suffered, nor any transgressor endured what I have endured!*”

“ *How veiled are ye, O My creatures,*” He, speaking with the voice of God, has revealed in the Bayán,<sup>2</sup> “ . . . who, without any right, have consigned Him unto a mountain (Mákú), not one of whose inhabitants is worthy of mention. . . . With Him, which is with Me, there is no one except him who is one of

1. A Fortress in Iran.

2. The Book revealed by the Báb.

*the Letters of the Living<sup>1</sup> of My Book. In His presence, which is My Presence, there is not at night even a lighted lamp ! And yet, in places (of worship) which in varying degrees reach out unto Him, unnumbered lamps are shining ! All that is on earth hath been created for Him, and all partake with delight of His benefits, and yet they are so veiled from Him as to refuse Him even a lamp !”*

What of Bahá'u'lláh, the germ of Whose Revelation, as attested by the Báb, is endowed with a potency superior to the combined forces of the Bábí Dispensation ? Was He not—He for Whom the Báb had suffered and died in such tragic and miraculous circumstances—made, for nearly half a century and under the domination of the two most powerful potentates of the East,<sup>2</sup> the object of a systematic and concerted conspiracy which, in its effects and duration, is scarcely paralleled in the annals of previous religions ?

“ *The cruelties inflicted by My oppressors,*” He Himself in His anguish has cried out, “ *have bowed Me down, and turned My hair white. Shouldst thou present thyself before My throne thou wouldest fail to recognize the Ancient Beauty,*<sup>3</sup> *for the freshness of His countenance is altered and its brightness hath faded, by reason of the oppression of the infidels. I swear by God ! His heart, His soul, and His vitals are melted !”* “ *Wert thou to hear with Mine ear,*” He also declares, “ *thou wouldest hear how ‘Ali (The Báb) bewaileth Me in the presence of the Glorious Companion, and how Muhammad weepeth over Me in the all-highest Horizon, and how the Spirit (Jesus) beateth Himself upon the head in the heaven of My decree, by reason of what hath befallen this Wronged One at the hands of every impious sinner.*” “ *Before Me,*” He elsewhere has written, “ *riseth up the Serpent of wrath with jaws stretched to engulf Me, and behind Me stalketh the lion of anger intent on tearing Me in pieces, and above Me, O My Well-Beloved, are the clouds of Thy decree, raining upon Me the showers of tribulations, whilst beneath Me are fixed the spears of misfortune, ready to wound My limbs and My body.*” “ *Couldst thou be told,*” He further affirms, “ *what hath befallen the Ancient Beauty, thou wouldest flee into*

1. The first 18 followers of the Báb were known as such.

2. The Sultan of Turkey and the Shah of Persia.

3. Bahá'u'lláh.

*the wilderness, and weep with a great weeping. In thy grief, thou wouldest smite thyself on the head and cry out as one stung by the sting of the adder. . . . By the righteousness of God! Every morning I arose from My bed I discovered the hosts of countless afflictions massed behind My door and every night when I lay down, lo! My heart was torn with agony at what it had suffered from the fiendish cruelty of its foes. With every piece of bread the Ancient Beauty breaketh is coupled the assault of a fresh affliction, and with every drop He drinketh is mixed the bitterness of the most woeful of trials. He is preceded in every step He taketh by an army of unforeseen calamities, while in His rear follow legions of agonizing sorrows."*

Was it not He who, at the early age of twenty-seven,<sup>1</sup> spontaneously arose to champion, in the capacity of a mere follower, the nascent Cause of the Báb? Was He not the One Who by assuming the actual leadership of a proscribed and harassed sect exposed Himself, and His kindred, and His possessions, and His rank, and His reputation to the grave perils, the bloody assaults, the general spoliation and furious defamations of both government and people? Was it not He—the Bearer of a Revelation, Whose Day "*every Prophet hath announced*," for which "*the soul of every Divine Messenger hath thirsted*," and in which "*God hath proved the hearts of the entire company of His Messengers and Prophets*"—was not the Bearer of such a Revelation, at the instigation of Shí'ih ecclesiastics and by order of the Sháh himself forced, for no less than four months, to breathe, in utter darkness, whilst in the company of the vilest criminals and freighted down with galling chains, the pestilential air of the vermin-infested subterranean dungeon of Tíhrán—a place which, as He Himself subsequently declared, was mysteriously converted into the very scene of the annunciation<sup>2</sup> made to Him by God of His Prophethood?

"*We were consigned*," He wrote in His "*Epistle to the Son of the Wolf*," "*for four months to a place foul beyond comparison. As to the dungeon in which this Wronged One and*

1. Bahá'u'lláh was born in 1817 A.D., so He was 27 years of age in 1844 A.D., when the Báb revealed Himself as the Forerunner of Bahá'u'lláh.

2. Bahá'u'lláh, till then espoused the Babi Cause, but in this prison, the Revelation of his own prophethood was made.

3. The title of an Epistle of Bahá'u'lláh to a Muslim divine.

others similarly wronged were confined, a dark and narrow pit were preferable. . . . The dungeon was wrapped in thick darkness, and Our fellow-prisoners numbered nearly a hundred and fifty souls : thieves, assassins, and highwaymen. Though crowded, it had no other outlet than the passage by which We entered. No pen can depict that place, nor any tongue describe its loathsome smell. Most of these men had neither clothes nor bedding to lie on. God alone knoweth what befell Us in that most foul-smelling and gloomy place!" "Abdu'l-Bahá," writes Dr. J. E. Esslemont, "tells how one day He was allowed to enter the prison-yard to see His beloved Father when He came out for His daily exercise. Bahá'u'lláh was terribly altered, so ill He could hardly walk. His hair and beard unkempt, His neck galled and swollen from the pressure of a heavy steel collar, His body bent by the weight of His chains." "For three days and three nights," Nabil has recorded in his chronicle,<sup>1</sup> "no manner of food or drink was given to Bahá'u'lláh. Rest and sleep were both impossible to Him. The place was infested with vermin, and the stench of that gloomy abode was enough to crush the very spirits of those who were condemned to suffer its horrors." "Such was the intensity of His suffering that the marks of that cruelty remained imprinted upon His body all the days of His life."

And what of the other tribulations which, before and immediately after this dreadful episode, touched Him? What of His confinement in the home of one of the Kad-Khudás of Tíhrán? What of the savage violence with which He was stoned by the angry people in the neighbourhood of the village of Níyálá? What of His incarceration by the emissaries of the army of the Sháh in Mázindarán, and His receiving the bastinado by order, and in the presence, of the assembled siyyids and mujtahids into whose hands He had been delivered by the Civil authorities of Amul? What of the howls of derision and abuse with which a crowd of ruffians subsequently pursued Him? What of the monstrous accusation brought against Him by the Imperial household, the Court and the people, when

---

i. The name of the book is "Dawn Breakers,"—an exhaustive record of the rise of the Babi Faith by Nabil, a great Baháí historian.

the attempt was made on the life of Násiri'd-Dín Sháh? What of the infamous outrages, the abuse and ridicule heaped on Him when He was arrested by responsible officers of the government, and conducted from Níyávarán "*on foot and in chains, with bared head and bare feet,*" and exposed to the fierce rays of the mid-summer sun, to the síyáh-chál of Tíhrán? What of the avidity with which corrupt officials sacked His house and carried away all His possessions and disposed of His fortune? What of the cruel edict that tore Him from the small band of the Báb's bewildered, hounded, and shepherdless followers, separated Him from His kinsmen and friends, and banished Him, in the depth of winter, despoiled and defamed, to 'Iráq?

Severe as were these tribulations which succeeded one another with bewildering rapidity as a result of the premeditated attacks and the systematic machinations of the court, the clergy, the government and the people, they were but the prelude to a harrowing and extensive captivity which that edict had formally initiated. Extending over a period of more than forty years, and carrying Him successively to 'Iráq, Sulaymáníyyih, Constantinople, Adrianople and finally to the penal colony of 'Akká, this long banishment was at last ended by His death, at the age of over three score years and ten, terminating a captivity which, in its range, its duration and the diversity and severity of its afflictions, is unexampled in the history of previous Dispensations.

No need to expatiate on the particular episodes which cast a lurid light on the moving annals of those years. No need to dwell on the character and actions of the peoples, rulers and divines who have participated in, and contributed to heighten the poignancy of the scenes of this, the greatest drama in the world's spiritual history.

## Features of This Moving Drama

To enumerate a few of the outstanding features of this moving drama will suffice to evoke in the reader of

these pages, already familiar with the history of the Faith, the memory of those vicissitudes which it has experienced, and which the world has until now viewed with such frigid indifference. The forced and sudden retirement of Bahá'u'lláh to the mountains of Sulaymáníyyih, and the distressing consequences that flowed from His two years' complete withdrawal ; the incessant intrigues indulged in by the exponents of Shí'ih Islám in Najaf and Karbilá, working in close and constant association with their confederates in Persia ; the intensification of the repressive measures decreed by Sultán 'Abdu'l-'Azíz which brought to a head the defection of certain prominent members of the exiled community ; the enforcement of yet another banishment by order of that same Sultán, this time to that far off and most desolate of cities, causing such despair as to lead two of the exiles to attempt suicide ; the unrelaxing surveillance to which they were subjected upon their arrival in 'Akká, by hostile officials, and the insufferable imprisonment for two years in the barracks of that town ; the interrogatory to which the Turkish páshá subsequently subjected his Prisoner at the headquarters of the government ; His confinement for no less than eight years in a humble dwelling surrounded by the befouled air of that city, His sole recreation being confined to pacing the narrow space of His room—these, as well as other tribulations, proclaim, on the one hand, the nature of the ordeal and the indignities He suffered, and point, on the other, the finger of accusations at those mighty ones of the earth who had either so sorely maltreated Him, or deliberately withheld from Him their succor.

No wonder that from the Pen of Him Who bore this anguish with such sublime patience these words should have been revealed : “ *He Who is the Lord of the seen and unseen is now manifest unto all men. His blessed Self hath been afflicted with such harm that if all the seas, visible and invisible, were turned into ink, and all that dwell in the kingdom into pens, and all that are in the heavens and all that are on earth into scribes, they would, of a certainty, be powerless to record it.* ” And again : “ *I have been most of the days of My life even as a slave sitting under a sword, hanging on a thread, knowing not* ”

*whether it would fall soon or late upon Him.” “ All this generation,” He affirms, “ could offer Us were wounds from its darts, and the only cup it proffered to Our lips was the cup of its venom. On Our neck We still bear the scar of chains, and upon Our body are imprinted the evidences of an unyielding cruelty.” “ Twenty years have passed, O kings ! ” He, addressing the kings of Christendom, at the height of His mission,<sup>1</sup> has written, “ during which We have, each day, tasted the agony of a fresh tribulation. No one of them that were before Us hath endured the things We have endured. Would that ye could perceive it ! They that rose up against Us have put Us to death, have shed Our blood, have plundered Our property, and violated Our honor. Though aware of most of Our afflictions, ye, nevertheless, have failed to stay the hand of the aggressor. For is it not your clear duty to restrain the tyranny of the oppressor, and to deal equitably with your subjects, that your high sense of justice may be fully demonstrated to all mankind ? ”*

Who is the ruler, may it not be confidently asked, whether of the East or of the West, who, at any time since the dawn<sup>2</sup> of so transcendent a Revelation, has been prompted to raise his voice either in its praise or against those who persecuted it ? Which people has, in the course of so long a captivity, felt urged to arise and stem the tide of such tribulations ? Who is the sovereign, excepting a single woman,<sup>3</sup> shining in solitary glory, who has, in however small a measure, felt impelled to respond to the poignant call of Bahá’u’lláh ? Who amongst the great ones of the earth was inclined to extend this infant Faith of God the benefit of his recognition or support ? Which one of the multitudes of creeds, sects, races, parties and classes and of the highly diversified schools of human thought, considered it necessary to direct its gaze towards the rising light of the Faith, to contemplate its unfolding system, to ponder its hidden processes, to appraise its weighty message, to acknowledge its regenerative power, to embrace its salutary truth, or to proclaim its eternal verities ? Who among the worldly-wise and the so-called

1. 1868-70 A.D.

2. Since 1844 A.D.

3. The Dowager Queen Marie of Rumania.

men of insight and wisdom can justly claim, after the lapse of nearly a century, to have disinterestedly approved its theme, to have considered impartially its claims, to have taken sufficient pains to delve into its literature, to have assiduously striven to separate facts from fiction, or to have accorded its cause the treatment it merits? Where are the pre-eminent exponents, whether of the arts or sciences, with the exception of a few isolated cases, who have lifted a finger, or whispered a word of commendation, in either the defense or the praise of a Faith that has conferred upon the world so priceless a benefit, that has suffered so long and so grievously, and which enshrines within its shell so entralling a promise for a world so woefully battered, so manifestly bankrupt?

To the mounting tide of trials which laid low the Báb, to the long-drawn-out calamities which rained on Bahá'u'lláh, to the warnings sounded by both the Herald and the Author of the Bahá'í Revelation, must be added the sufferings which, for no less than seventy years, were endured by 'Abdu'l-Bahá,<sup>1</sup> as well as His pleas, and entreaties, uttered in the evening of His life, in connection with the dangers that increasingly threatened the whole of mankind. Born in the very year<sup>2</sup> that witnessed the inception of the Bábí Revelation; baptized with the initial fires of persecution that raged around that nascent Cause; an eye-witness, when a boy of eight, of the violent upheavals that rocked the Faith which His Father had espoused; sharing with Him, the ignominy, the perils, and rigors consequent upon the successive banishments from His native-land to countries far beyond its confines; arrested and forced to support, in a dark cell, the indignity of imprisonment soon after His arrival in 'Akká; the object of repeated investigations and the target of continual assaults and insults under the despotic rule of Sultán 'Abdu'l-Hamíd, and later under the ruthless military dictatorship of the suspicious and merciless Jamál Pashá—He, too, the Center and Pivot of Bahá'u'lláh's peerless Covenant and

1. The eldest Son of Bahá'u'lláh.

2. 'Abdu'l-Bahá was born on 23rd May 1844 A.D. the very day and hour of the Báb's Declaration.

the perfect Exemplar of His teachings, was made to taste, at the hands of potentates, ecclesiastics, governments and peoples, the cup of woe which the Báb and Bahá'u'lláh, as well as so many of their followers, had drained.

With the warnings which both His pen and voice have given in countless Tablets<sup>1</sup> and discourses, during an almost lifelong incarceration and in the course of His extended travels in both the European and American continents, they who labor for the spread of His Father's Faith in the western world are sufficiently acquainted. How often and how passionately did He appeal to those in authority and to the public at large to examine dispassionately the precepts enunciated by His Father? With what precision and emphasis He unfolded the system of the Faith He was expounding, elucidated its fundamental verities, stressed its distinguishing features, and proclaimed the redemptive character of its principles? How insistently did He foreshadow the impending chaos, the approaching upheavals, the universal conflagration which, in the concluding years<sup>2</sup> of His life, had only begun to reveal the measure of its force and the significance of its impact on human society?

A co-sharer in the woeful trials and momentary frustrations afflicting the Báb and Bahá'u'lláh; reaping a harvest in His lifetime wholly incommensurate to the sublime, the incessant and strenuous efforts He had exerted; experiencing the initial perturbations of the world-shaking catastrophe in store for an unbelieving humanity; bent with age, and with eyes dimmed by the gathering storm which the reception accorded by a faithless generation to His Father's Cause was raising, and with a heart bleeding over the immediate destiny of God's wayward children—He, at last, sank beneath a weight of troubles for which they who had imposed them upon Him, and upon those gone before Him, were soon to be summoned to a dire reckoning.

“*Hasten, O my God!*” He cried, at a time when adversity had sore beset Him, “*the days of my ascension unto*

1. Abdu'l-Bahá's letters to several people.

2. Abdu'l-Bahá passed away from this life in 1921 A.D.

*Thee, and of my coming before Thee, and of my entry into Thy presence, that I may be delivered from the darkness of the cruelty inflicted by them upon me, and may enter the luminous atmosphere of Thy nearness, O my Lord, the All-Glorious, and may rest under the shadows of Thy most great mercy.” “Yá-Bábá’u'l-Abhá (O Thou the Glory of Glories)! ” He wrote in a Tablet revealed during the last week of His life, “I have renounced the world and the people thereof, and am heart-broken and sorely-afflicted because of the unfaithful. In the cage of this world I flutter even as a frightened bird, and yearn every day to take my flight unto Thy Kingdom. Yá-Bábá’u'l-Abhá! Make me to drink of the cup of sacrifice, and set me free. Believe me from these woes and trials, from these afflictions and troubles.”*

Dear friends! Alas, a thousand times alas, that a Revelation so incomparably great, so infinitely precious, so mightily potent, so manifestly innocent, should have received, at the hands of a generation so blind and so perverse, so infamous a treatment! “O My servants!” Bahá’u’lláh Himself testifies, “The one true God is My witness! This most great, this fathomless and surging ocean is near, astonishingly near, unto you. Behold it is closer to you than your life-vein! Swift as the twinkling of an eye ye can, if ye but wish it, reach and partake of this imperishable favor, this God-given grace, this incorruptible gift, this most potent and unspeakably glorious bounty.”

## A World Receded from Him

After a revolution of well-nigh one hundred years<sup>1</sup> what is it that the eye encounters as one surveys the international scene and looks back upon the early beginnings of Bahá’í history? A world convulsed by the agonies of contending systems, races and nations, entangled in the mesh of its accumulated falsities, receding farther and farther from Him Who is the sole Author of its destinies, and sinking deeper and deeper into a suicidal carnage which its neglect and persecution of Him Who is its Redeemer have precipitated. A Faith, still proscribed, yet bursting

through its chrysalis, emerging from the obscurity of a century-old repression, face to face with the awful evidences of God's wrathful anger, and destined to arise above the ruins of a smitten civilization. A world spiritually destitute, morally bankrupt, politically disrupted, socially convulsed, economically paralyzed, writhing, bleeding and breaking up beneath the avenging rod of God. A Faith Whose call remained unanswered, Whose claims were rejected, Whose warnings were brushed aside, Whose followers were mowed down, Whose aims and purposes were maligned, Whose summons to the rulers of the earth were ignored, Whose Herald<sup>1</sup> drained the cup of martyrdom, over the head of Whose Author<sup>2</sup> swept a sea of unheard of tribulations and Whose Exemplar<sup>3</sup> sank beneath the weight of life-long sorrows and dire misfortunes. A world that has lost its bearings, in which the bright flame of religion is fast dying out, in which the forces of a blatant nationalism and racialism have usurped the rights and prerogatives of God Himself, in which a flagrant secularism—the direct offspring of irreligion—has raised its triumphant head and is protruding its ugly features, in which the "majesty of kingship" has been disgraced, and they who wore its emblems have, for the most part, been hurled from their thrones, in which the once all-powerful ecclesiastical hierarchies of Islám, and to a lesser extent those of Christianity, have been discredited, and in which the virus of prejudice and corruption is eating into the vitals of an already gravely disordered society. A Faith Whose institutions—the pattern and crowning glory of the age which is to come—have been ignored and in some instances trampled upon and uprooted, Whose unfolding system has been derided and partly suppressed and crippled, Whose rising Order—the sole refuge of a civilization in the embrace of doom—has been spurned and challenged, Whose Mother-Temple<sup>4</sup> has been seized and misappropriated, and Whose "House"<sup>5</sup>—the "cynosure of an adoring world"—has, through a gross

1. Bab.

2. Baha'u'llah.

3. Abdu'l-Baha.

4. The first Bahá'i House of Worship built in Ishqábád (Turkistán) Russia.

5. Baha'u'llah's residence at Baghdad.

miscarriage of justice, as witnessed by the world's highest tribunal, been delivered into the hands of, and violated by, its implacable enemies.

We are indeed living in an age which, if we would correctly appraise it, should be regarded as one which is witnessing a dual phenomenon. The first signalizes the death-pangs of an order, effete and godless, that has stubbornly refused, despite the signs and portents of a century-old Revelation, to attune its processes to the precepts and ideals which that Heaven-sent Faith proffered it. The second proclaims the birth-pangs of an Order, divine and redemptive, that will inevitably supplant the former, and within Whose administrative structure an embryonic civilization, incomparable and world-embracing, is imperceptibly maturing. The one is being rolled up, and is crashing in oppression, bloodshed, and ruin. The other opens up vistas of a justice, a unity, a peace, a culture, such as no age has ever seen. The former has spent its force, demonstrated its falsity and barrenness, lost irretrievably its opportunity, and is hurrying to its doom. The latter, virile and unconquerable, is plucking asunder its chains, and is vindicating its title to be the one refuge within which a sore-tried humanity, purged from its dross, can attain its destiny.

*“Soon,” Bahá’ulláh Himself has prophesied, “will the present day order be rolled up, and a new one spread out in its stead.” And again : “By Myself ! The day is approaching when We will have rolled up the world and all that is therein, and spread out a new Order in its stead.” “The day is approaching when God will have raised up a people who will call to remembrance Our days, who will tell the tale of Our trials, who will demand the restitution of Our rights, from them who, without a tittle of evidence, have treated Us with manifest injustice.”*

Dear friends ! For the trials which have afflicted the Faith of Bahá’u’lláh a responsibility appalling and inescapable rests upon those into whose hands the reins of civil and ecclesiastical authority were delivered. The kings of the earth and the world's religious leaders alike must primarily bear the brunt of such an awful responsibility. “*Everyone well knoweth,*” Bahá’u’lláh Himself testifies, “*that all the*

*kings have turned aside from Him, and all the religions have opposed Him.” “From time immemorial,” He declares, “they who have been outwardly invested with authority have debarred men from setting their faces towards God. They have disliked that men should gather together around the Most Great Ocean, inasmuch as they have regarded, and still regard, such a gathering as the cause of, and the motive for, the disruption of their sovereignty.” “The kings,” He moreover has written, “have recognized that it was not in their interest to acknowledge Me, as have likewise the ministers and the divines, notwithstanding that My purpose hath been most explicitly revealed in the Divine Books and Tablets, and the True One hath loudly proclaimed that this Most Great Revelation hath appeared for the betterment of the world and the exaltation of the nations.”*

“*Gracious God!*” writes the Báb in the *Dalá'il-i-Sab'i*<sup>1</sup> (Seven Proofs) with reference to the “*seven powerful sovereigns ruling the world*” in His day, “*None of them hath been informed of His (The Báb) Manifestation, and if informed, none hath believed in Him. Who knoweth they may leave this world below full of desire, and without having realized that the thing for which they were waiting had come to pass. This is what happened to the monarchs that held fast unto the Gospel. They awaited the coming of the Prophet of God (Muhammad), and when He did appear, they failed to recognize Him. Behold how great are the sums which these sovereigns expend without even the slightest thought of appointing an official charged with the task of acquainting them in their own realms with the Manifestation of God! They would thereby have fulfilled the purpose for which they have been created. All their desires have been and are still fixed upon leaving behind them traces of their names.*” The Báb, moreover, in that same treatise, censuring the failure of the Christian divines to acknowledge the truth of Muhammad’s mission, makes this illuminating statement: “*The blame falleth upon their doctors, for if these had believed, they would have been followed by the mass of their countrymen. Behold, then, that which hath come to pass! The learned men of Christendom are held to be learned by virtue of their safeguarding the teaching of Christ, and yet consider how*

---

<sup>1</sup>. One of the 23 Books revealed by the Báb.

*they themselves have been the cause of men's failure to accept the Faith and attain unto salvation!"*

## Recipients of the Message

It should not be forgotten that it was the kings of the earth and the world's religious leaders who, above all other categories of men, were made the direct recipients of the Message proclaimed by both the Báb and Bahá'u'lláh. It was they who were deliberately addressed in numerous and historic Tablets, who were summoned to respond to the Call of God, and to whom were directed, in clear and forcible language, the appeals, the admonitions and warnings of His persecuted Messengers. It was they who, when the Faith was born, and later when its mission was proclaimed, were still, for the most part, wielding unquestioned and absolute civil and ecclesiastical authority over their subjects and followers. It was they who, whether glorying in the pomp and pageantry of a kingship as yet scarcely restricted by constitutional limitations, or entrenched within the strongholds of a seemingly inviolable ecclesiastical power, assumed ultimate responsibility for any wrongs inflicted by those whose immediate destinies they controlled. It would be no exaggeration to say that in most of the countries of the European and Asiatic continents absolutism, on the one hand, and complete subservience to ecclesiastical hierarchies, on the other, were still the outstanding features of the political and religious life of the masses. These, dominated and shackled, were robbed of the necessary freedom that would enable them to either appraise the claims and merits of the Message proffered to them, or to embrace unreservedly its truth.

Small wonder, then, that the Author of the Bahá'í Faith, and to a lesser degree its Herald, should have directed at the world's supreme rulers and religious leaders the full force of Their Messages, and made them the recipients of some of Their most sublime Tablets, and invited them, in a language at once clear and insistent, to heed Their call. Small wonder that They should have taken the pains to unroll before their eyes the truths of Their respective Revelations,

and should have expatiated on Their woes and sufferings. Small wonder that They should have stressed the preciousness of the opportunities which it was in the power of these rulers and leaders to seize, and should have warned them in ominous tones of the grave responsibilities which the rejection of God's Message would entail, and should have predicted, when rebuffed and refused, the dire consequences which such a rejection involved. Small wonder that He Who is the King of Kings and the Vice-gerent of God Himself should, when abandoned, condemned and persecuted, have uttered this epigrammatic and momentous prophecy : *"From two ranks amongst men power hath been seized : kings and ecclesiastics."*

As to the kings and emperors who not only symbolized in their persons the majesty of earthly dominion but who, for the most part, actually held unchallengeable sway over the multitudes of their subjects, their relation to the Faith of Bahá'u'lláh constitutes one of the most illuminating episodes in the history of the Heroic and Formative Ages of that Faith. The Divine summons which embraced within its scope so large a number of the crowned heads of both Europe and Asia ; the theme and language of the Messages that brought them into direct contact with the Source of God's Revelation ; the nature of their reaction to so stupendous an impact ; and the consequences which ensued and can still be witnessed today are the salient features of a subject upon which I can but inadequately touch, and which will be fully and befittingly treated by future Bahá'í historians.

The Emperor of the French, the most powerful ruler of his day on the European continent, Napoleon III ; Pope Pius IX, the supreme head of the highest church in Christendom, and wielder of the scepter of both temporal and spiritual authority ; the omnipotent Czar of the vast Russian Empire, Alexander II ; the renowned Queen Victoria, whose sovereignty extended over the greatest political combination the world has witnessed ; William I, the conqueror of Napoleon III, King of Prussia and the newly acclaimed monarch of a unified Germany ; Francis Joseph, the autocratic king-emperor of the Austro-Hun-

garian monarchy, the heir of the far-famed Holy Roman Empire; the tyrannical 'Abdu'l-'Azíz, the embodiment of the concentrated power vested in the Sultanate and the Caliphate; the notorious Násiri'd-Dín Sháh, the despotic ruler of Persia and the mightiest potentate of Shí'ih Islám—in a word, most of the pre-eminent embodiments of power and of sovereignty in His day became, one by one, the object of Bahá'u'lláh's special attention, and were made to sustain, in varying degrees, the weight of the force communicated by His appeals and warnings.

It should be borne in mind, however, that Bahá'u'lláh has not restricted the delivery of His Message to a few individual sovereigns, however potent the scepters they severally wielded, and however vast the dominions which they ruled. All the kings of the earth have been collectively addressed by His Pen, appealed to, and warned, at a time when the star of His Revelation was mounting its zenith, and whilst He lay a prisoner in the hands, and in the vicinity of the court, of His royal enemy. In a memorable Tablet, designated as the Súriy-i-Múluk<sup>1</sup> (Súrih of Kings) in which the Sultán himself and his ministers, and the kings of Christendom, and the French and Persian Ambassadors accredited to the Sublime Porte, and the Muslim ecclesiastical leaders in Constantinople, and its wise men and its inhabitants, and the people of Persia, and the philosophers of the world have been specifically addressed and admonished, He thus directs His words to the entire company of the monarchs of East and West :

## Tablets to the Kings

*“O Kings of the earth! Give ear unto the Voice of God, calling from this sublime, this fruit-laden Tree, that hath sprung out of the Crimson Hill, upon the holy Plain, intoning the words: ‘There is none other God but He, the Mighty, the All-Powerful, the All-Wise.’ . . . Fear God, O concourse of kings, and suffer not yourselves to be deprived of this most sublime grace. Fling away, then, the things ye possess, and take fast hold on the Handle*

1. Bahá'u'lláh's Epistle to kings in general.

of God, the Exalted, the Great. Set your hearts towards the Face of God, and abandon that which your desires have bidden you to follow, and be not of those who perish. Relate unto them, O servant, the story of 'Alí (the Báb), when He came unto them with truth, bearing His glorious and weighty Book, and holding in His hands a testimony and proof from God, and holy and blessed tokens from Him. Ye, however, O kings, have failed to heed the Remembrance of God in His days and to be guided by the lights which arose and shone forth above the horizon of a resplendent Heaven. Ye examined not His Cause when so to do would have been better for you than all that the sun shineth upon, could ye but perceive it. Ye remained careless until the divines of Persia—those cruel ones—pronounced judgment against Him, and unjustly slew Him. His spirit ascended unto God, and the eyes of the inmates of Paradise and the angels that are nigh unto Him wept sore by reason of this cruelty. Beware that ye be not careless henceforth as ye have been careless aforetime. Return, then, unto God, your Maker, and be not of the heedless . . . My face hath come forth from the veils, and shed its radiance upon all that is in heaven and on earth ; and yet, ye turned not towards Him, notwithstanding that ye were created for Him, O concourse of kings ! Follow, therefore, that which I speak unto you, and hearken unto it with your hearts, and be not of such as have turned aside. For your glory consisteth not in your sovereignty, but rather in your nearness unto God and your observance of His command as sent down in His holy and preserved Tablets. Should any one of you rule over the whole earth, and over all that lieth within it and upon it, its seas, its lands, its mountains, and its plains, and yet be not remembered by God, all these would profit him not, could ye but know it . . . Arise, then, and make steadfast your feet, and make ye amends for that which hath escaped you, and set then yourselves towards His holy Court, on the shore of His mighty Ocean, so that the pearls of knowledge and wisdom, which God hath stored up within the shell of His radiant heart, may be revealed unto you . . . Beware lest ye binder the breeze of God from blowing over your hearts, the breeze through which the hearts of such as have turned unto Him can be quickened . . .

“ Lay not aside the fear of God, O kings of the earth,” He, in that same Tablet has revealed, “ and beware that ye transgress not the bounds which the Almighty hath fixed. Observe

the injunctions laid upon you in His Book, and take good heed not to overstep their limits. Be vigilant, that ye may not do injustice to anyone, be it to the extent of a grain of mustard seed. Tread ye the path of justice, for this, verily, is the straight path. Compose your differences, and reduce your armaments, that the burden of your expenditures may be lightened, and that your minds and hearts may be tranquilized. Heal the dissensions that divide you, and ye will no longer be in need of any armaments except what the protection of your cities and territories demandeth. Fear ye God, and take heed not to outstrip the bounds of moderation, and be numbered among the extravagant. We have learned that you are increasing your outlay every year, and are laying the burden thereof on your subjects. This, verily, is more than they can bear, and is a grievous injustice. Decide justly between men, and be ye the emblems of justice amongst them. This, if ye judge fairly, is the thing that behooveth you, and becometh your station.

“ Beware not to deal unjustly with any one that appealeth to you, and entereth beneath your shadow. Walk ye in the fear of God, and be ye of them that lead a godly life. Rest not on your power, your armies, and treasures. Put your whole trust and confidence in God, Who hath created you, and seek ye His help in all your affairs. Succor cometh from Him alone. He succoureth whom He willeth with the hosts of the heavens and of the earth.

“ Know ye that the poor are the trust of God in your midst. Watch that ye betray not His trust, that ye deal not unjustly with them and that ye walk not in the ways of the treacherous. Ye will most certainly be called upon to answer for His trust on the day when the Balance of Justice shall be set, the day when unto every one shall be rendered his due, when the doings of all men, be they rich or poor, shall be weighed.

“ If ye pay no heed unto the counsels which, in peerless and unequivocal language, We have revealed in this Tablet, Divine chastisement shall assail you from every direction, and the sentence of His justice shall be pronounced against you. On that day ye shall have no power to resist Him, and shall recognize your own impotence. Have mercy on yourselves and on those beneath you, and judge ye between them according to the precepts prescribed by God in His most holy and exalted Tablet, a

Tablet wherein He hath assigned to each and every thing its settled measure, in which He hath given, with distinctness, an explanation of all things, and which is in itself a monition unto them that believe in Him.

“ Examine Our Cause, inquire into the things that have befallen Us, and decide justly between Us and Our enemies, and be ye of them that act equitably towards their neighbors. If ye stay not the hand of the oppressor, if ye fail to safeguard the rights of the down-trodden, what right have ye then to vaunt yourselves among men? What is it of which ye can rightly boast? Is it on your food and your drink that ye pride yourselves, on the riches ye lay up in your treasuries, on the diversity and the cost of the ornaments with which ye deck yourselves? If true glory were to consist in the possession of such perishable things, then the earth on which ye walk must needs vaunt itself over you, because it supplieth you, and bestoweth upon you, these very things, by the decree of the Almighty. In its bowels are contained, according to what God hath ordained, all that ye possess. From it, as a sign of His mercy, ye derive your riches. Behold then your state, the thing in which ye glory! Would that ye could perceive it! Nay, By Him Who holdeth in His grasp the kingdom of the entire creation! Nowhere doth your true and abiding glory reside except in your firm adherence unto the precepts of God, your wholehearted observance of His laws, your resolution to see that they do not remain unenforced, and to pursue steadfastly the right course . . . ”

And again in that same Tablet: “ Twenty years have passed, O kings, during which We have, each day, tasted the agony of a fresh tribulation. No one of them that were before Us hath endured the things We have endured. Would that ye could perceive it! They that rose up against Us, have put Us to death, have shed Our blood, have plundered Our property, and violated Our honor. Though aware of most of Our afflictions, ye, nevertheless, have failed to stay the hand of the aggressor. For is it not your clear duty to restrain the tyranny of the oppressor, and to deal equitably with your subjects, that your high sense of justice may be fully demonstrated to all mankind?

“ God hath committed into your hands the reins of the government of the people, that ye may rule with justice over them, safeguard the rights of the down-trodden, and punish the wrong-

doers. If ye neglect the duty prescribed unto you by God in His Book, your names shall be numbered with those of the unjust in His sight. Grievous, indeed, will be your error. Cleave ye to that which your imaginations have devised, and cast behind your backs the commandments of God, the Most Exalted, the Inaccessible, the All-Compelling, the Almighty? Cast away the things ye possess, and cling to that which God hath bidden you observe. Seek ye His grace, for he that seeketh it treadeth His straight Path.

“ Consider the state in which We are, and behold ye the ills and trouble that have tried Us. Neglect Us not, though it be for a moment, and judge ye between Us and Our enemies with equity. This will, surely, be a manifest advantage unto you. Thus do We relate to you Our tale, and recount the things that have befallen Us, that ye might take off Our ills and ease Our burden. Let him who will, relieve Us from Our trouble; and as to him that willeth not, my Lord is assuredly the best of Helpers.

“ Warn and acquaint the people, O Servant, with the things We have sent down unto Thee, and let the fear of no one dismay Thee, and be Thou not of them that waver. The day is approaching when God will have exalted His Cause and magnified His testimony in the eyes of all who are in the heavens and all who are on the earth. Place, in all circumstances, Thy whole trust in Thy Lord, and fix Thy gaze upon Him and turn away from all them that repudiate His truth. Let God, Thy Lord, be Thy sufficing Succorer and Helper. We have pledged Ourselveto secure Thy triumph upon earth and to exalt Our Cause above all men, though no king be found who would turn his face towards Thee. . . . ”

In the *Kitáb-i-Aqdas* (The Most Holy Book), that priceless treasury enshrining for all time the brightest emanations of the mind of Bahá'u'lláh, the Charter of His World Order, the chief repository of His Laws, the Harbinger of His Covenant, the Pivotal Work containing some of His noblest exhortations, weightiest pronouncements, and portentous prophecies, and revealed during the full tide of His tribulations, at a time when the rulers of the earth had definitely forsaken Him—in such a Book we read the following :

“ O kings of the earth ! He Who is the sovereign Lord of all is come. The Kingdom is God's, the omnipotent Protector,

*the Self-Subsisting. Worship none but God, and, with radiant hearts, lift up your faces unto your Lord, the Lord of all names. This is a Revelation to which whatever ye possess can never be compared, could ye but know it. We see you rejoicing in that which ye have amassed from others, and shutting out yourselves from the worlds which naught except My Guarded Tablet can reckon. The treasures ye have laid up have drawn you far away from your ultimate objective. This ill beseemeth you, could ye but understand it. Wash your hearts from all earthly defilements, and hasten to enter the Kingdom of your Lord, the Creator of earth and heaven, Who caused the world to tremble, and all its peoples to wail, except them that have renounced all things and clung to that which the Hidden Tablet hath ordained..."*

## The Most Great Law Revealed

And further: "O kings of the earth! The Most Great Law hath been revealed in this Spot, this Scene of transcendent splendor. Every hidden thing hath been brought to light, by virtue of the Will of the Supreme Ordainer, He Who hath ushered in the Last Hour, through Whom the Moon hath been cleft,<sup>1</sup> and every irrevocable decree expounded.

"Ye are but vassals, O kings of the earth! He Who is the King of Kings hath appeared, arrayed in His most wondrous glory, and is summoning you unto Himself, the Help in Peril, the Self-Subsisting. Take heed lest pride deter you from recognizing the Source of Revelation; lest the things of this world shut you out as by a veil from Him Who is the Creator of heaven. Arise, and serve Him Who is the Desire of all nations, Who hath created you through a word from Him, and ordained you to be, for all time, the emblems of His sovereignty.

"By the righteousness of God! It is not Our wish to lay hands on your kingdoms. Our mission is to seize and possess the hearts of men. Upon them the eyes of Bahá are fastened. To this testifieth the Kingdom of Names, could ye but comprehend it. Whoso followeth his Lord, will renounce the world and all that is therein; how much greater, then, must be the detachment of Him Who holdeth so august a station! Forsake your palaces,

1. Refer to the Islamic Traditions.

and haste ye to gain admittance into His Kingdom. This, indeed, will profit you both in this world and in the next. To this testifieth the Lord of the realm on high, did ye but know it.

“How great is the blessedness that awaiteth the king who will arise to aid My Cause in My Kingdom, who will detach himself from all else but Me! Such a king is numbered with the companions of the Crimson Ark, the Ark which God hath prepared for the people of Bahá. All must glorify his name, must reverence his station, and aid him to unlock the cities with the keys of My Name, the omnipotent Protector of all that inhabit the visible and invisible kingdoms. Such a king is the very eye of mankind, the luminous ornament on the brow of creation, the fountainhead of blessings unto the whole world. Offer up, O people of Bahá, your substance, nay your very lives, for his assistance.”

And further, this evident arraignment in that same Book: “We have asked nothing from you. For the sake of God We, verily, exhort you, and will be patient as We have been patient in that which hath befallen Us at your hands, O concourse of kings!”

Moreover, in His Tablet to Queen Victoria, Bahá’u’lláh thus addresses all the kings of the earth, summoning them to cleave to the Lesser Peace, as distinct from that Most Great Peace which those who are fully conscious of the power of His Revelation and avowedly profess the tenets of His Faith can alone proclaim and must eventually establish:

“O kings of the earth! We see you increasing every year your expenditures, and laying the burden thereof on your subjects. This, verily, is wholly and grossly unjust. Fear the sighs and tears of this Wronged One,<sup>1</sup> and lay not excessive burdens on your peoples. Do not rob them to rear palaces for yourselves; nay rather choose for them that which ye choose for yourselves. Thus We unfold to your eyes that which profiteth you, if ye but perceive. Your people are your treasures. Beware lest your rule violate the commandments of God, and ye deliver your wards to the hands of the robber. By them ye rule, by their means ye subsist, by their aid ye conquer. Yet, how disdainfully ye look upon them! How strange, how very strange!

---

i. Baha'u'llah.

“Now that ye have refused the Most Great Peace, hold ye fast unto this, the Lesser Peace, that haply ye may in some degree better your own condition and that of your dependents.

“O rulers of the earth! Be reconciled among yourselves, that ye may need no more armaments save in a measure to safeguard your territories and dominions. Beware lest ye disregard the counsel of the All-Knowing, the Faithful.

“Be united, O kings of the earth, for thereby will the tempest of discord be stilled amongst you, and your people find rest, if ye be of them that comprehend. Should any one among you take up arms against another, rise ye all against him, for this is naught but manifest justice.”

To the Christian kings Bahá'u'lláh, moreover, particularly directs His words of censure, and, in a language that cannot be mistaken, He discloses the true character of His Revelation:

“O kings of Christendom! Heard ye not the saying of Jesus, the Spirit of God, ‘I go away, and come again unto you’? Wherefore, then, did ye fail, when He did come again unto you in the clouds of heaven, to draw nigh unto Him, that ye might behold His face, and be of them that attained His Presence? In another passage He saith: ‘When He, the Spirit of Truth, is come, He will guide you unto all truth.’ And yet, behold how, when He did bring the truth, ye refused to turn your faces towards Him, and persisted in disporting yourselves with your pastimes and fancies. Ye welcomed Him not, neither did ye seek His Presence, that he might hear the verses of God from His own mouth, and partake of the manifold wisdom of the Almighty, the All-Glorious, the All-Wise. Ye have, by reason of your failure, hindered the breath of God from being wafted over you, and have withheld from your souls the sweetness of its fragrance. Ye continue roving with delight in the valley of your corrupt desires. Ye and all ye possess shall pass away. Ye shall, most certainly, return to God, and shall be called to account for your doings in the presence of Him Who shall gather together the entire creation . . .”

The Báb, moreover, in the *Qayyúmu'l-Asmá'*, His celebrated commentary on the Súrih of Joseph,<sup>1</sup> revealed in the first year of His Mission, and characterized by Bahá'u'-

---

i. The title of a chapter in the Qur'án.

lláh as “*the first, the greatest, and mightiest of all books*” in the Bábí Dispensation, has issued this stirring call to the kings and princes of the earth:

“*O concourse of kings and of the sons of kings! Lay aside, one and all, your dominion which belongeth unto God . . . . Vain indeed is your dominion, for God hath set aside earthly possessions for such as have denied Him . . . . O concourse of kings! Deliver with truth and in all haste the verses sent down by Us to the peoples of Turkey and of India, and beyond them, with power and with truth, to lands in both the East and the West . . . . By God! If ye do well, to your own behoof will ye do well; and if ye deny God and His signs, We, in very truth, having God, can well dispense with all creatures and all earthly dominion.*”

And again: “*Fear ye God, O concourse of kings, lest ye remain afar from Him Who is His Remembrance (the Báb), after the Truth hath come unto you with a Book and signs from God, as spoken through the wondrous tongue of Him Who is His Remembrance. Seek ye grace from God, for God hath ordained for you, after ye have believed in Him, a Garden the vastness of which is as the vastness of the whole of Paradise.*”

So much for the epoch-making counsels and warnings collectively addressed by the Báb and Bahá’u’lláh to the sovereigns of the earth, and more particularly directed to the kings of Christendom. I would be failing to do justice to my theme were I to ignore, or even to dismiss briefly, those audacious, fate-laden apostrophes to individual monarchs who, whether as kings or emperors, have either viewed with cold indifference the tribulations, or rejected with contempt the warnings of the twin Founders<sup>1</sup> of our Faith. I can neither quote as fully as I should from the two thousand and more verses that have streamed from the pen of Bahá’u’lláh and, to a lesser extent, from that of the Báb, addressed to individual monarchs in Europe and Asia, nor is it my purpose to expatiate upon the circumstances that have evoked, or the consequences that have flowed from, those astounding utterances. The historian of the future, viewing more widely and in fuller perspective, the momentous happenings of the Apostolic and Formative

1. Bab and Bahá’u’llah.

Ages of the Faith of Bahá'u'lláh, will no doubt be able to evaluate accurately and to describe in a circumstantial manner the causes, the implications and the effects of these Divine Messages which, in their scope and effectiveness, have certainly no parallel in the religious annals of mankind.

To the French Emperor, Napoleon III, Bahá'u'lláh addressed these words : “ *O King of Paris ! Tell the priests to ring the bells no longer. By God, the True One ! The Most Mighty Bell hath appeared in the form of Him Who is the Most Great Name,<sup>1</sup> and the fingers of the will of thy Lord, the Most Exalted, the Most High, toll it out in the heaven of Immortality, in His Name, the All-Glorious.* Thus have the mighty verses of thy Lord been again sent down unto thee, that thou mayest arise to remember God, the Creator of earth and heaven, in these days when all the tribes of the earth have mourned, and the foundations of the cities have trembled, and the dust of irreligion hath enwrapped all men, except such as thy Lord, the All-Knowing, the All-Wise, was pleased to spare . . . . Give ear, O King, unto the Voice that calleth from the Fire which burneth in this Verdant Tree, upon this Sinai which hath been raised above the hallowed and snow-white Spot, beyond the Everlasting City : ‘ *Verily, there is none other God but Me, the Ever-Forgiving, the Most Merciful !* ’ We, in truth, have sent Him Whom We aided with the Holy Spirit (Jesus), that He may announce unto you this Light that hath shone forth from the horizon of the will of your Lord, the Most Exalted, the All Glorious, and Whose signs have been revealed in the West, that ye may set your faces towards Him (Bahá'u'lláh), on this Day which God hath exalted above all other days, and whereon the All-Merciful hath shed the splendor of His effulgent glory upon all who are in heaven and all who are on earth. Arise thou to serve God and help His Cause. He, verily, will assist thee with the hosts of the seen and unseen, and will set thee king over all that whereon the sun riseth. Thy Lord, in truth, is the All-Powerful, the Almighty . . . . Attire thy temple with the ornament of My Name, and thy tongue with remembrance of Me, and thine heart with love for Me, the Almighty, the Most High. We have desired for thee naught except that which is better for thee than what thou dost possess and all the

---

i. Bahá'u'llah.

*treasures of the earth. Thy Lord, verily, is knowing, informed of all . . . .*

*“O King! We heard the words thou didst utter in answer to the Czar of Russia, concerning the decision made regarding the war (Crimean War). Thy Lord, verily, knoweth, is informed of all. Thou didst say: ‘I lay asleep upon my couch, when the cry of the oppressed, who were drowned in the Black Sea, awakened me.’ This is what we heard thee say, and, verily, thy Lord is witness unto what I say. We testify that that which wakened thee was not their cry, but the promptings of thine own passions, for We tested thee, and found thee wanting. Comprehend the meaning of My words, and be thou of the discerning . . . . Hadst thou been sincere in thy words, thou wouldst have not cast behind thy back the Book of God, when it was sent unto thee by Him Who is the Almighty, the All-Wise. We have proved thee through it, and found thee other than that which thou didst profess. Arise, and make amends for that which escaped thee. Ere long the world and all that thou possessest will perish, and the kingdom will remain unto God, thy Lord and the Lord of thy fathers of old. It behoveth thee not to conduct thine affairs according to the dictates of thy desires. Fear the sighs of this Wronged One, and shield Him from the darts of such as act unjustly. For what thou hast done, thy kingdom shall be thrown into confusion, and thine empire shall pass from thine hands, as a punishment for that which thou hast wrought. Then wilt thou know how thou hast plainly erred. Commotions shall seize all the people in that land, unless thou arisest to help this Cause, and followest Him Who is the Spirit of God (Jesus) in this, the straight Path. Hath thy pomp made thee proud? By My Life! It shall not endure; nay, it shall soon pass away, unless thou holdest fast by this firm Cord. We see abasement hastening after thee, while thou art of the heedless . . . . Abandon thy palaces to the people of the graves, and thine empire to whosoever desireth it, and turn, then, unto the Kingdom. This, verily, is what God hath chosen for thee, wert thou of them that turn unto Him . . . . Shouldst thou desire to bear the weight of thy dominion, bear it then to aid the Cause of thy Lord. Glorified be this station which whoever attaineth thereunto hath attained unto all good that proceedeth from Him Who is the All-Knowing, the All-Wise . . . . Exultest thou*

over the treasures thou dost possess, knowing they shall perish? Rejoicest thou in that thou rulest a span of earth, when the whole world, in the estimation of the people of Bahá, is worth as much as the black in the eye of a dead ant? Abandon it unto such as have set their affections upon it, and turn thou unto Him Who is the Desire of the world. Whither are gone the proud and their palaces? Gaze thou into their tombs, that thou mayest profit by this example, inasmuch as We made it a lesson unto every beholder. Were the breezes of Revelation to seize thee, thou wouldest flee the world, and turn unto the Kingdom, and wouldest expend all thou possessest, that thou mayest draw nigh unto this sublime Vision."

## Revealed to the Pope

To Pope Pius IX, Bahá'u'lláh revealed the following: "O Pope! Rend the veils asunder. He Who is the Lord of Lords is come overshadowed with clouds,<sup>1</sup> and the decree hath been fulfilled by God, the Almighty, the Unrestrained... He, verily, hath again come down from Heaven even as He came down from it the first time. Beware that thou dispute not with Him even as the Pharisees disputed with Him (Jesus) without a clear token or proof. On His right hand flow the living Waters of grace, and on His left the choice Wine of justice, whilst before Him march the angels of Paradise, bearing the banners of His signs. Beware lest any name debar thee from God, the Creator of earth and heaven. Leave thou the world behind thee, and turn towards thy Lord, through Whom the whole earth hath been illumined... Dwellest thou in palaces whilst He Who is the King<sup>2</sup> of Revelation liveth in the most desolate of abodes<sup>3</sup>? Leave them unto such as desire them, and set thy face with joy and delight towards the Kingdom... Arise in the name of thy Lord, the God of Mercy, amidst the peoples of the earth, and seize thou the Cup of Life with the hands of confidence, and first drink thou therefrom, and proffer it then to such as turn towards it amongst the peoples of all faiths..."

"Call thou to remembrance Him Who was the Spirit

1. St. Mathews XVI, 27; and XXV, 31, etc.

2. Bahá'u'lláh.

3. Akka,—the then worst penal colony of Turkey.

(Jesus), *Who, when He came, the most learned of His age pronounced judgment against Him in His own country, whilst he who was only a fisherman believed in Him.* Take heed, then, ye men of understanding heart! Thou, in truth, art one of the sons of the heaven of His names. *Guard thyself, lest darkness spread its veils over thee, and fold thee away from His light . . . Consider those who opposed the Son (Jesus), when He came unto them with sovereignty and power.* How many the Pharisees who were waiting to behold Him, and were lamenting over their separation from Him! And yet, when the fragrance of His coming was wafted over them, and His beauty was unveiled, they turned aside from Him and disputed with Him . . . None save a very few, who were destitute of any power amongst men, turned towards His face. And yet, today, every man endowed with power and invested with sovereignty prideth himself on His Name! In like manner, consider how numerous, in these days, are the monks who, in My Name, have secluded themselves in their churches, and who, when the appointed time was fulfilled, and We unveiled Our beauty, knew Us not, though they call upon Me at eventide and at dawn . . .

“The Word which the Son<sup>1</sup> concealed is made manifest. It hath been sent down in the form of the human temple in this day. Blessed be the Lord Who is the Father<sup>2</sup>! He, verily, is come unto the nations in His most great majesty. Turn your faces towards Him, O concourse of the righteous! . . . This is the day whereon the Rock (Peter) crieth out and shouteth, and celebrateth the praise of its Lord, the All-Possessing, the Most High, saying: ‘Lo! The Father is come, and that which ye were promised in the Kingdom is fulfilled! . . .’ My body longeth for the cross, and Mine head waiteth the thrust of the spear, in the path of the All-Merciful, that the world may be purged from its transgressions . . .

“O Supreme Pontiff! Incline thine ear unto that which the Fashioner of mouldering bones counselleth thee, as voiced by Him Who is His Most Great Name.<sup>2</sup> Sell all the embellished ornaments thou dost possess, and expend them in the path of God, Who causeth the night to return upon the day, and the day to return upon the night. Abandon thy kingdom unto the kings, and emerge from thy habitation, with thy face set towards the Kingdom, and, detached from the world, then speak forth the praises of thy

1. Jesus Christ.

2. Baha'u'llah.

*Lord betwixt earth and heaven. Thus hath bidden thee He Who is the Possessor of Names, on the part of thy Lord, the Almighty, the All-Knowing. Exhort thou the kings and say: 'Deal equitably with men. Beware lest ye transgress the bounds fixed in the Book.' This indeed becometh thee. Beware lest thou appropriate unto thyself the things of the world and the riches thereof. Leave them unto such as desire them, and cleave unto that which hath been enjoined upon thee by Him Who is the Lord of creation. Should any one offer thee all the treasures of the earth, refuse to even glance upon them. Be as thy Lord hath been. Thus hath the Tongue of Revelation spoken that which God hath made the ornament of the book of creation . . . Should the inebriation of the wine of My verses seize thee, and thou determinest to present thyself before the throne of thy Lord, the Creator of earth and heaven, make My love thy vesture, and thy shield remembrance of Me, and thy provision reliance upon God, the Revealer of all power . . . Verily, the day of ingathering is come, and all things have been separated from each other. He hath stored away that which He chose in the vessels of justice, and cast into fire that which befitteth it. Thus hath it been decreed by your Lord, the Mighty, the Loving, in this promised Day. He, verily, ordaineth what He pleaseth. There is none other God save He, the Almighty, the All-Compelling."*

In the Tablet addressed to the Czar of Russia, Alexander II, we read: "O Czar of Russia! Incline thine ear unto the voice of God, the King, the Holy, and turn thou unto Paradise, the Spot wherein abideth He Who, among the Concourse on high, beareth the most excellent titles, and Who, in the kingdom of creation, is called by the name of God, the Effulgent, the All-Glorious. Beware lest thy desire deter thee from turning towards the face of thy Lord, the Compassionate, the Most Merciful. We, verily, have heard the thing for which thou didst supplicate thy Lord, whilst secretly communing with Him. Wherefore, the breeze of My loving-kindness wafted forth, and the sea of My mercy surged, and We answered thee in truth. Thy Lord, verily, is the All-Knowing, the All-Wise. Whilst I lay chained and fettered in the prison, one of thy ministers extended Me his aid. Wherefore hath God ordained for thee a station which the knowledge of none can comprehend except His knowledge. Beware lest thou barter away this sublime station

... Beware lest thy sovereignty withhold thee from Him Who is the Supreme Sovereign. He, verily, is come with His Kingdom, and all the atoms cry aloud: 'Lo! The Lord is come in His great majesty!' He Who is the Father is come, and the Son (Jesus), in the holy vale, crieth out: 'Here am I, here am I, O Lord My God!', whilst Sinai circleth round the House, and the Burning Bush calleth aloud: 'The All-Bounteous is come mounted upon the clouds! Blessed is he that draweth nigh unto Him, and woe betide them that are far away.'

"Arise thou amongst men in the name of this all-compelling Cause, and summon, then, the nations unto God, the Exalted, the Great. Be thou not of them who called upon God by one of His names, but who, when He Who is the Object of all names appeared, denied Him and turned aside from Him, and, in the end, pronounced sentence against Him with manifest injustice. Consider and call thou to mind the days whereon the Spirit of God (Jesus) appeared, and Herod gave judgment against Him. God, however, aided Him with the hosts of the unseen, and protected Him with truth, and sent Him down unto another land, according to His promise. He, verily, ordaineth what He pleaseth. Thy Lord truly preserveth whom He willeth, be he in the midst of the seas, or in the maw of the serpent, or beneath the sword of the oppressor . . ."

"Again I say: Hearken unto My Voice that calleth from My prison, that it may acquaint thee with the things that have befallen My Beauty, at the hands of them that are the manifestations of My glory, and that thou mayest perceive how great hath been My patience, notwithstanding My might, and how immense My forebearance, notwithstanding My power. By My Life! Couldst thou but know the things sent down by My Pen, and discover the treasures of My Cause, and the pearls of My mysteries which lie hid in the seas of My names and in the goblets of My words, thou wouldest, in thy love for My name, and in thy longing for My glorious and sublime Kingdom, lay down thy life in My path. Know thou that though My body be beneath the swords of My foes, and My limbs be beset with incalculable afflictions, yet My spirit is filled with a gladness with which all the joys of the earth can never compare.

"Set thine heart towards Him Who is the Point of adoration for the world, and say: O peoples of the earth! Have

ye denied the One<sup>1</sup> in Whose path He<sup>2</sup> Who came with the truth, bearing the announcement of your Lord, the Exalted, the Great, suffered martyrdom? Say: This is an Announcement whereat the hearts of the Prophets and Messengers have rejoiced. This is the One Whom the heart of the world remembereth and is promised in the Books of God, the Mighty, the All-Wise. The hands of the Messengers were, in their desire to meet Me, up-raised towards God, the Mighty, the Glorified. . . . Some lamented in their separation from Me, others endured hardships in My path, and still others laid down their lives for the sake of My Beauty, could ye but know it. Say: I, verily, have not sought to extol Mine Own Self, but rather God Himself were ye to judge fairly. Naught can be seen in Me except God and His Cause, could ye but perceive it. I am the One Whom the tongue of Isaiah<sup>3</sup> hath extolled, the One with Whose name both the Torah and the Evangel<sup>4</sup> were adorned. . . . Blessed be the king whose sovereignty hath withheld him not from his Sovereign, and who hath turned unto God with his heart. He, verily, is accounted of those that have attained unto that which God, the Mighty, the All-Wise, hath willed. Ere long will such a one find himself numbered with the monarchs of the realms of the Kingdom. Thy Lord is, in truth, potent over all things. He giveth what He willeth to whomsoever He willeth, and withholdeth what He pleaseth from whomsoever He willeth. He, verily, is the All-Powerful, the Almighty.”

To Queen Victoria Bahá'u'lláh has written: “O Queen in London! Incline thine ear unto the voice of thy Lord, the Lord of all mankind, calling from the Divine Lote-Tree: Verily, no God is there but Me, the Almighty, the All-Wise! Cast away all that is on earth, and attire the head of thy kingdom with the crown of the remembrance of thy Lord, the All-Glorious. He, in truth, hath come unto the world in His most great glory, and all that hath been mentioned in the Gospel hath been fulfilled. The land of Syria hath been honored by the footsteps of its Lord, the Lord of all men, and north and south are both inebriated with the wine of His presence. Blessed is

1. Bahá'u'lláh.

2. The Báb.

3. Old Testament, Isaiah XXXV, 2, etc.

4. St. Mathews XVI 27; and XXV, 31, etc.

*the man that inhaled the fragrance of the Most Merciful, and turned unto the Dawning-Place of His Beauty, in this resplendent Dawn. The Mosque of Aqsá vibrateth through the breezes of its Lord, the All-Glorious whilst Bathá (Mecca) trembleth at the voice of God, the Exalted, the Most High. Whereupon every single stone of them celebrateth the praise of the Lord, through this Great Name.*

*“ Lay aside thy desire, and set then thine heart towards thy Lord, the Ancient of Days. We make mention of thee for the sake of God, and desire that thy name may be exalted through thy remembrance of God, the Creator of earth and heaven. He, verily, is witness unto that which I say. We have been informed that thou hast forbidden the trading in slaves, both men and women. This, verily, is what God hath enjoined in this wondrous Revelation. God hath, truly, destined a reward for thee, because of this. He verily, will pay the doer of good his due recompense, wert thou to follow what hath been sent unto thee by Him Who is the All-Knowing, the All-Informed. As to him who turneth aside, and swelleth with pride, after that the clear tokens have come unto him, from the Revealer of signs, his work shall God bring to naught. He, in truth, hath power over all things. Man’s actions are acceptable after his having recognized (the Manifestation). He that turneth aside from the True One is indeed the most veiled amongst His creatures. Thus hath it been decreed by Him Who is the Almighty, the Most Powerful.*

*“ We have also heard that thou hast entrusted the reins of counsel into the hands of the representatives of the people. Thou, indeed, hast done well, for thereby the foundations of the edifice of thine affairs will be strengthened, and the hearts of all that are beneath thy shadow, whether high or low, will be tranquilized. It behoveth them, however, to be trustworthy among His servants, and to regard themselves as the representatives of all that dwell on earth. This is what counselleth them, in this Tablet, He Who is the Ruler, the All-Wise. . . . Blessed is he that entereth the assembly for the sake of God, and judgeth between men with pure justice. He, indeed, is of the blissful. . . .*

*“ Turn thou unto God and say : O my Sovereign Lord ! I am but a vassal of Thine, and Thou art, in truth, the King of Kings. I have lifted my suppliant hands unto the heaven of Thy grace and Thy bounties. Send down, then, upon me from the clouds of*

*Thy generosity that which will rid me of all save Thee, and draw me nigh unto Thyself. I beseech Thee, O my Lord, by Thy name, which Thou hast made the king of names, and the manifestation of Thyself to all who are in heaven and on earth, to rend asunder the veils that have intervened between me and my recognition of the Dawning-Place of Thy signs and the Dayspring of Thy Revelation. Thou art, verily, the Almighty, the All-Powerful, the All-Bounteous. Deprive me not, O my Lord, of the fragrances of the Robe of Thy mercy in Thy days, and write down for me that which Thou hast written down for Thy handmaidens who have believed in Thee and in Thy signs, and have recognized Thee, and set their hearts towards the horizon of Thy Cause. Thou art truly the Lord of the worlds, and of those who show mercy, the Most Merciful. Assist me, then, O my God, to remember Thee amongst Thy handmaidens, and to aid Thy Cause in Thy lands. Accept, then, that which hath escaped me when the light of Thy countenance shone forth. Thou, indeed, hast power over all things. Glory be to Thee, O Thou in Whose hand is the kingdom of the heavens and of the earth.”*

In the *Kitáb-i-Aqdas*, His Most Holy Book, Bahá'u'lláh thus addresses the German Emperor, William I: “Say: O King of Berlin! Give ear unto the Voice calling from this manifest Temple<sup>1</sup>: Verily, there is none other God but Me, the Everlasting, the Peerless, the Ancient of Days. Take heed lest pride debar thee from recognizing the Dayspring of Divine Revelation, lest earthly desires shut thee out, as by a veil from the Lord of the Throne above and of the earth below. Thus counselleth thee the Pen of the Most High. He, verily, is the Most Gracious, the All-Bountiful. Do thou remember the one whose power transcended thy power (Napoleon III), and whose station excelled thy station. Where is he? Whither are gone the things he possessed? Take warning, and be not of them that are fast asleep. He it was who cast the Tablet of God behind him, when We made known unto him what the hosts of tyranny had caused Us to suffer. Wherefore, disgrace assailed him from all sides, and he went down to dust in great loss. Think deeply, O King, concerning him, and concerning them who, like unto thee, have conquered cities and ruled over men. The

---

i. Baha'u'llah.

*All-Merciful brought them down from their palaces to their graves. Be warned, be of them who reflect."*

And further, in that same Book, this remarkable prophecy : "O banks of the Rhine ! We have seen you covered with gore, inasmuch as the swords of retribution were drawn against you ; and you shall have another turn. And We hear the lamentations of Berlin, though she be today in conspicuous glory."

Again in the Kitáb-i-Aqdas these words, directed to Emperor Francis Joseph, are recorded : "O Emperor of Austria ! He who is the Dayspring of God's Light<sup>1</sup> dwelt in the prison of 'Akka, at the time when thou didst set forth to visit the Aqsa Mosque (Jerusalem). Thou passed Him by, and inquired not about Him, by Whom every house is exalted, and every lofty gate unlocked. We, verily, made it (Jerusalem) a place whereunto the world should turn, that they might remember Me, and yet thou hast rejected Him<sup>1</sup> Who is the Object of this remembrance, when He appeared with the Kingdom of God, thy Lord and the Lord of the worlds. We have been with thee at all times, and found thee clinging unto the Branch and heedless of the Root. Thy Lord, verily, is a witness unto what I say. We grieved to see thee circle round Our Name, whilst unaware of Us, though We were before thy face. Open thine eyes, that thou mayest behold this glorious Vision, and recognize Him Whom thou invokest in the daytime and in the night-season, and gaze on the Light that shineth above this luminous Horizon."

In the Súriy-i-Múluk, Sultán 'Abdu'l-'Azíz is addressed in the following terms : "Hearken, O king, to the speech of Him that speaketh the truth, Him that doth not ask thee to recompense Him with the things God hath chosen to bestow upon thee, Him Who unerringly treadeth the straight Path. He it is Who summoneth thee unto God, thy Lord, Who sheweth thee the right course, the way that leadeth to true felicity, that haply thou mayest be of them with whom it shall be well . . . He that giveth up himself wholly to God, God shall, assuredly, be with him ; and he that placeth his complete trust in God, God shall, verily, protect him from whatsoever may harm him, and shield him from the wickedness of every evil plotter.

---

1. Bahá'u'llah.

“Wert thou to incline thine ear unto My speech and observe My counsel, God would exalt thee to so eminent a position that the designs of no man on the whole earth could ever touch or hurt thee. Observe, O king, with thine inmost heart and with thy whole being, the precepts of God, and walk not in the paths of the oppressor. Seize thou, and hold firmly within the grasp of thy might, the reins of the affairs of thy people, and examine in person whatever pertaineth unto them. Let nothing escape thee, for therein lieth the highest good.

“Render thanks unto God for having chosen thee out of the whole world, and made thee king over them that profess thy faith. It well becometh thee to appreciate the wondrous favors with which God hath favored thee, and to magnify continually His name. Thou canst best praise Him if thou lovest His loved ones, and dost safeguard and protect His servants from the mischief of the treacherous, that none may any longer oppress them. Thou shouldst, moreover, arise to enforce the law of God amongst them, that thou mayest be of those who are firmly established in His law.

“Shouldst thou cause rivers of justice to spread their waters amongst thy subjects, God would surely aid thee with the hosts of the unseen and of the seen, and would strengthen thee in thine affairs. No God is there but Him. All creation and its empire are His. Unto Him return the works of the faithful.

“Place not thy reliance on thy treasures. Put thy whole confidence in the grace of God, thy Lord. Let Him be thy trust in whatever thou doest, and be of them that have submitted themselves to His will. Let Him be thy helper and enrich thyself with His treasures, for with Him are the treasures of the heavens and of the earth. He bestoweth them upon whom He will, and from whom He will He withholdeth them. There is none other God but Him, the All-Possessing, the All-Praised. All are but paupers at the door of His mercy; all are helpless before the revelation of His sovereignty, and beseech His favors.

“Overstep not the bounds of moderation, and deal justly with them that serve thee. Bestow upon them according to their needs, and not to the extent that will enable them to lay up riches for themselves, to deck their persons, to embellish their homes, to acquire the things that are of no benefit unto them, and to be numbered with the extravagant. Deal with them with undeviating

justice, so that none among them may either suffer want, or be pampered with luxuries. This is but manifest justice. Allow not the abject to rule over and dominate them who are noble and worthy of honor, and suffer not the high-minded to be at the mercy of the contemptible and worthless, for this is what We observed upon Our arrival in the City (Constantinople), and to it We bear witness . . .

“ Set before thine eyes God’s unerring Balance and, as one standing in His Presence, weigh in that balance thine actions every day, every moment of thy life. Bring thyself to account ere thou art summoned to a reckoning, on the Day when no man shall have strength to stand for fear of God, the Day when the hearts of the heedless ones shall be made to tremble . . .

“ Thou art God’s shadow on earth. Strive, therefore, to act in such a manner as befitteth so eminent, so august a station. If thou dost depart from following the things We have caused to descend upon thee and taught thee, thou wilt, assuredly, be derogating from that great and priceless honor. Return, then, and cleave wholly unto God, and cleanse thine heart from the world and all its vanities, and suffer not the love of any stranger to enter and dwell therein. Not until thou dost purify thine heart from every trace of such love can the brightness of the light of God shed its radiance upon it, for to none hath God given more than one heart. This, verily, hath been decreed and written down in His ancient Book. And as the human heart, as fashioned by God, is one and undivided, it behoveth thee to take heed that its affections be, also, one and undivided. Cleave thou, therefore, with the whole affection of thine heart, unto His love, and withdraw it from the love of any one besides Him, that He may aid thee to immerse thyself in the ocean of His unity, and enable thee to become a true upholder of His oneness . . .

## Let the Oppressor Desist

“ Let thine ear be attentive, O king, to the words We have addressed thee. Let the oppressor desist from his tyranny, and cut off the perpetrators of injustice from among them that profess thy faith. By the righteousness of God! The tribulations We have sustained are such that any pen that recounteth them cannot but be overwhelmed with anguish. No one of them that

truly believe and uphold the unity of God can bear the burden of their recital. So great have been Our sufferings that even the eyes of our enemies have wept over Us, and beyond them those of every discerning person. And to all these trials have We been subjected, in spite of Our action in approaching thee, and in bidding the people to enter beneath thy shadow, that thou mightest be a stronghold unto them that believe in and uphold the unity of God.

“Have I, O king, ever disobeyed thee? Have I, at any time, transgressed any of thy laws? Can any of thy ministers that represent thee in ‘Iráq produce any proof that can establish My disloyalty to thee? No, by Him Who is the Lord of all worlds! Not for one short moment did We rebel against thee, or against any of thy ministers. Never, God willing, shall We revolt against thee, though We be exposed to trials more severe than any We suffered in the past. In the day-time and in the night season, at even and at morn, We pray to God on thy behalf, that He may graciously aid thee to be obedient unto Him and to observe His commandments, that He may shield thee from the hosts of the evil ones. Do, therefore, as it pleaseth thee, and treat Us as befitteth thy station and becometh thy sovereignty. Be not forgetful of the law of God in whatever thou desirest to achieve, now or in the days to come. Say: Praise be to God, the Lord of all worlds!”

Moreover, in the *Kitáb-i-Aqdas*, is this vehement apostrophe to Constantinople: “O Spot that art situate on the shores of the two seas! The throne of tyranny hath, verily, been established upon thee, and the flame of hatred hath been kindled within thy bosom, in such wise that the Concourse on high and they who circle around the Exalted Throne have wailed and lamented. We behold in thee the foolish ruling over the wise, and darkness vaunting itself against the light. Thou art indeed filled with manifest pride. Hath thine outward splendor made thee vain-glorious? By Him Who is the Lord of mankind! It shall soon perish, and thy daughters and thy widows and all the kindreds that dwell within thee shall lament. Thus informeth thee the All-Knowing, the All-Wise.”

As to Násiri’d-Dín Sháh,<sup>1</sup> the Lawh<sup>2</sup>-i-Sultán, des-

1. The Shah of Persia.

2. “Lawh” literally means a Tablet or an Epistle.

patched to him from 'Akká and constituting Bahá'u'lláh's lengthiest Epistle to any single sovereign, proclaims : "O king ! I was but a man like others, asleep upon My couch, when lo, the breezes of the All-Glorious were wafted over Me, and taught Me the knowledge of all that hath been. This thing is not from Me, but from One Who is Almighty and All-Knowing. And He bade Me lift up My voice between earth and heaven, and for this there befell Me what hath caused the tears of every man of understanding to flow. The learning current amongst men I studied not ; their schools I entered not. Ask of the city wherein I dwelt, that thou mayest be well assured that I am not of them who speak falsely. This is but a leaf which the winds of the will of thy Lord, the Almighty, the All-Praised, have stirred. Can it be still when the tempestuous winds are blowing ? Nay, by Him Who is the Lord of all Names and Attributes ! They move it as they list. The evanescent is as nothing before Him Who is the Ever-Abiding. His all-compelling summons hath reached Me, and caused Me to speak His praise amidst all people I was indeed as one dead when His behest was uttered. The hand of the will of thy Lord, the Compassionate, the Merciful, transformed Me. Can any one speak forth of his own accord that for which all men, both high and low, will protest against him ? Nay, by Him Who taught the Pen the eternal mysteries, save him whom the grace of the Almighty, the All-Powerful, hath strengthened. The Pen of the Most High addresseth Me saying : Fear not. Relate unto His Majesty the Sháh that which befell thee. His heart, verily, is between the fingers of thy Lord, the God of Mercy, that haply the sun of justice and bounty may shine forth above the horizon of his heart. Thus hath the decree been irrevocably fixed by Him Who is the All-Wise.

"Look upon this Youth,<sup>1</sup> O King, with the eyes of justice ; judge thou, then, with truth concerning what hath befallen Him. Of a verity, God hath made thee His shadow amongst men, and the sign of His power unto all that dwell on earth. Judge thou between Us and them that have wronged Us without proof and without an enlightening Book. They that surround thee love thee for their own sakes, whereas this Youth loveth thee for thine own sake, and hath had no desire except to draw thee nigh unto the seat

---

i. Bahá'u'lláh.

of grace, and to turn thee toward the right-hand of justice. Thy Lord beareth witness unto that which I declare.

“ O King ! Wert thou to incline thine ear unto the shrill of the Pen of Glory and the cooing of the Dove of Eternity which, on the branches of the Lote-Tree beyond which there is no passing, uttereth praises to God, the Maker of all names and Creator of earth and heaven, thou wouldst attain unto a station from which thou wouldst behold in the world of being naught save the effulgence of the Adored One, and wouldst regard thy sovereignty as the most contemptible of thy possessions, abandoning it to whosoever might desire it, and setting thy face toward the Horizon aglow with the light of His countenance. Neither wouldst thou ever be willing to bear the burden of dominion save for the purpose of helping thy Lord, the Exalted, the Most High. Then would the Concourse on high bless thee. O how excellent is this most sublime station, couldst thou ascend thereunto through the power of a sovereignty recognized as derived from the Name of God ! . . .

“ O King of the age ! The eyes of these refugees are turned towards and fixed upon the mercy of the Most Merciful. No doubt is there whatever that these tribulations will be followed by the outpourings of a supreme mercy, and these dire adversities be succeeded by an over-flowing prosperity. We fain would hope, however, that His Majesty the Sháh will himself examine these matters, and bring hope to the hearts. That which We have submitted to thy Majesty is indeed for thine highest good. And God, verily, is a sufficient witness unto Me. . . .

“ O would that thou wouldst permit Me, O Sháh, to send unto thee that which would cheer the eyes, and tranquillize the souls, and persuade every fair-minded person that with Him is the knowledge of the Book. . . . But for the repudiation of the foolish and the connivance of the divines, I would have uttered a discourse that would have thrilled and carried away the hearts unto a realm from the murmur of whose winds can be heard : ‘ No God is there but He ! ’ . . .

“ I have seen, O Sháh, in the path of God what eye hath not seen nor ear heard. . . . How numerous the tribulations which have rained, and will soon rain, upon Me ! I advance with My face set towards Him Who is the Almighty, the All-Bounteous, whilst behind Me glideth the serpent. Mine eyes have rained down tears until My bed is drenched. I sorrow not for Myself,

however. By God ! Mine head yearneth for the spear out of love for its Lord. I never passed a tree, but Mine heart addressed it saying : ‘ O would that thou wert cut down in My name, and My body crucified upon thee, in the path of My Lord ! ’ ... By God ! Though weariness lay Me low, and hunger consume Me, and the bare rock be My bed, and My fellows the beasts of the field ! I will not complain, but will endure patiently as those endued with constancy and firmness have endured patiently, through the power of God, the Eternal King and Creator of the nations, and will render thanks unto God under all conditions. We pray that, out of His bounty—exalted be He—He may release, through this imprisonment, the necks of men from chains and fetters, and cause them to turn, with sincere faces, towards His Face, Who is the Mighty, the Bounteous. Ready is He to answer whosoever calleth upon Him, and nigh is He unto such as commune with Him.”

In the Qayyúmu'l-Asmá' the Báb, for His part, thus addresses Muhammad Sháh : “ O King of Islám ! Aid thou, with the truth, after having aided the Book, Him Who is Our Most Great Remembrance, for God hath, in very truth, destined for thee, and for such as circle round thee, on the Day of Judgment, a responsible position in His Path. I swear by God, O Sháh ! If thou shovest enmity unto Him Who is His Remembrance, God will, on the Day of Resurrection, condemn thee, before the kings, unto hell-fire, and thou shalt not, in very truth, find on that Day any helper except God, the Exalted. Purge thou, O Sháh, the Sacred Land (Tíhrán) from such as have repudiated the Book, ere the day whereon the Remembrance of God cometh, terribly and of a sudden, with His potent Cause, by the leave of God, the Most High. God, verily, hath prescribed to thee to submit unto Him Who is His Remembrance, and unto His Cause, and to subdue, with the truth and by His leave, the countries, for in this world thou hast been mercifully invested with sovereignty, and will, in the next, dwell, nigh unto the Seat of Holiness, with the inmates of the Paradise of His good-pleasure. Let not thy sovereignty deceive thee, O Sháh, for ‘ every soul shall taste of death,’<sup>1</sup> and this, in very truth, hath been written down as a decree of God.”

---

i. A Verse in the Qur'án.

In His Tablet to Muhammad Sháh the Báb, moreover, has revealed : “ *I am the Primal Point from which have been generated all created things. I am the Countenance of God Whose splendor can never be obscured, the Light of God Whose radiance can never fade. . . . All the keys of heaven God hath chosen to place on My right hand, and all the keys of hell on My left. . . . I am one of the sustaining pillars of the Primal Word of God. Whosoever hath recognized Me, hath known all that is true and right, and hath attained all that is good and seemly. . . . The substance wherewith God hath created Me is not the clay out of which others have been formed. He hath conferred upon Me that which the worldly-wise can never comprehend, nor the faithful discover. . . .* ”

“ *By My life ! But for the obligation to acknowledge the Cause of Him Who is the Testimony of God . . . I would not have announced this unto thee . . . In that same year (year 60)<sup>1</sup> I despatched a messenger and a book unto thee, that thou mightest act towards the Cause of Him Who is the Testimony of God as befitteth the station of thy sovereignty . . .* ”

“ *I swear by the truth of God ! Were he who hath been willing to treat Me in such a manner to know who it is whom he hath so treated, he, verily, would never in his life be happy. Nay —I, verily, acquaint thee with the truth of the matter—it is as if he hath imprisoned all the Prophets, and all the men of truth, and all the chosen ones . . . Woe betide him from whose hands floweth evil, and blessed the man from whose hands floweth good . . .* ”

“ *I swear by God ! I seek no earthly goods from thee, be it as much as a mustard seed . . . I swear by the truth of God ! Wert thou to know that which I know, thou wouldest forego the sovereignty of the world and of the next, that thou mightest attain My good-pleasure, through thine obedience unto the True One . . . Wert thou to refuse, the Lord of the world would raise up one who will exalt His Cause, and the Command of God will, verily, be carried into effect.”* ”

Dear friends ! How vast a panorama these gem-like, these soul-searching divinely uttered pronouncements outspread before our eyes !

## God's Vicar on Earth

What memories they evoke! How sublime the principles they inculcate! What hopes they engender! What apprehensions they excite! And yet how fragmentary must these above-quoted words, suited as they are to the immediate purpose of my theme, appear when compared with the torrential majesty which only the reading of the full text can disclose! He Who was God's Vicar<sup>1</sup> on earth, addressing, at the most critical moment when His Revelation was attaining its zenith, those who concentrated in their persons the splendor, the sovereignty, and the strength of earthly dominion, could certainly not subtract one jot or tittle from the weight and force which the presentation of so historic a Message demanded. Neither the perils which were fast closing in upon Him, nor the formidable power with which the doctrine of absolute sovereignty invested, at that time, the emperors of the West and the potentates of the East, could restrain the Exile and Prisoner of Adrianople<sup>1</sup> from communicating the full blast of His Message to His twin imperial persecutors as well as to the rest of their fellow-sovereigns.

The magnitude and diversity of the theme, the cogency of the argument, the sublimity and audacity of the language, arrest our attention and astound our minds. Emperors, kings and princes, chancellors and ministers, the Pope himself, priests, monks and philosophers, the exponents of learning, parliamentarians and deputies, the rich ones of the earth, the followers of all religions, and the people of Bahá—all are brought within the purview of the Author of these Messages, and receive, each according to their merits, the counsels and admonitions they deserve. No less amazing is the diversity of the subjects touched upon in these Tablets. The transcendent majesty and unity of an unknowable and unapproachable God is extolled, and the oneness of His Messengers proclaimed and emphasized. The uniqueness, the universality and potentialities of the Bahá'í Faith are stressed, and the

---

1. Baha'u'llah.

purpose and character of the Bábí Revelation unfolded. The significance of Bahá'u'lláh's sufferings and banishments is disclosed, and the tribulations rained down upon His Herald<sup>1</sup> and upon His Namesake<sup>2</sup> recognized and lamented. His own yearning for the crown of martyrdom, which they both so mysteriously won, is voiced, and the ineffable glories and wonders in store for His own Dispensation foreshadowed. Episodes, at once moving and marvellous, at various stages of His ministry, are recounted, and the transitoriness of worldly pomp, fame, riches, and sovereignty, repeatedly and categorically asserted. Appeals for the application of the highest principles in human and international relations are forcibly and insistently made, and the abandonment of discreditable practices and conventions, detrimental to the happiness, the growth, the prosperity and the unity of the human race, enjoined. Kings are censured, ecclesiastical dignitaries arraigned, ministers and plenipotentiaries condemned, and the identification of His advent with the coming of the Father Himself unequivocally admitted and repeatedly announced. The violent downfall of a few of these kings and emperors is prophesied, two<sup>3</sup> of them are definitely challenged, most are warned, all are appealed to and exhorted.

In the Lawh-i-Sultán (Tablet to the Sháh of Persia) Bahá'u'lláh declares : “ *Would that the world-adorning wish of His Majesty might decree that this Servant be brought face to face with the divines of the age, and produce proofs and testimonies in the presence of His Majesty the Sháh ! This Servant is ready, and taketh hope in God, that such a gathering may be convened in order that the truth of the matter may be made clear and manifest before His Majesty the Sháh. It is then for thee to command, and I stand ready before the throne of thy sovereignty. Decide, then, for Me or against Me.* ”

And moreover, in the Lawh-i-Ra'ís, Bahá'u'lláh, recalling His conversation with the Turkish officer charged with the task of enforcing His banishment to the fortress-

1. The Báb.

2. Mullah Hussein titled Babul-Bab, Bab's first followers; Bahá'u'lláh's personal name was Mirza Hussein.

3. The Sultan of Turkey and the Shah of Persia.

town of 'Akká, has written: "There is a matter, which, if thou findest it possible, I request thee to submit to His Majesty the Sultán, that for ten minutes this Youth<sup>1</sup> be enabled to meet him, so that he may demand whatsoever he deemeth as a sufficient testimony, regardeth as proof of the veracity of Him Who is the Truth. Should God enable Him to produce it, let him, then, release these wronged ones, and leave them to themselves."

"He promised," Bahá'u'lláh adds in that Tablet, "to transmit this message, and to give Us his reply. We received, however, no news from him. Although it becometh not Him<sup>1</sup> Who is the Truth to present Himself before any person, inasmuch as all have been created to obey Him, yet in view of the condition of these little children and the large number of women so far removed from their friends and countries, We have acquiesced in this matter. In spite of this nothing hath resulted. 'Umar himself is alive and accessible. Inquire from him, that the truth may be made known unto you."

Referring to these Tablets addressed to the sovereigns of the earth, and which 'Abdu'l-Bahá has acclaimed as a "miracle," Bahá'u'lláh has written: "Each one of them hath been designated by a special name. The first hath been named "The Rumbling," the second, "The Blow," the third, "The Inevitable," the fourth, "The Plain," the fifth, "The Catastrophe," and the others, "The Stunning Trumpet Blast," "The Near Event," "The Great Terror," "The Trumpet," "The Bugle," and their like, so that all the peoples of the earth may know, of a certainty, and may witness, with outward and inner eyes, that He Who is the Lord of Names hath prevailed, and will continue to prevail, under all conditions, over all men. . . . Never since the beginning of the world hath the Message been so openly proclaimed. . . . Glorified be this Power which hath shone forth and compassed the worlds! This act of the Causér of Causes hath, when revealed, produced two results. It hath at once sharpened the swords of the infidels, and unloosed the tongues of such as have turned towards Him in His remembrance and praise. This is the effect of the fertilizing winds, mention of which hath been made aforetime in the Lawh-i-Haykal.<sup>2</sup> The whole earth is now in a state of pregnancy. The day is approach-

1. Bahá'u'lláh.

2. A writing of Bahá'u'lláh.

ing when it will have yielded its noblest fruits, when from it will have sprung forth the loftiest trees, the most enchanting blossoms, the most heavenly blessings. Immeasurably exalted is the breeze that wafteth from the garment of thy Lord, the Glorified ! For lo, it bath breathed its fragrance and made all things new ! <sup>1</sup> Well it is with them that comprehend. It is indubitably clear and evident that in these things He Who is the Lord of Revelation <sup>2</sup> hath sought nothing for Himself. Though aware that they would lead to tribulations, and be the cause of troubles and afflictive trials, He, solely as a token of His loving-kindness and favor, and for the purpose of quickening the dead and of redeeming all who are on earth, hath closed His eyes to His own well-being and borne that which no other person hath borne or will bear."

The most important of His Tablets, addressed to individual sovereigns, Bahá'u'lláh ordered to be written in the form of a pentacle, symbolizing the temple of man, including therein, as a conclusion, the following words which reveal the importance He attached to those Messages, and indicate their direct association with the prophecy of the Old Testament : " *Thus have We built the Temple with the hands of power and might, could ye but know it. This is the Temple promised unto you in the Book. Draw ye nigh unto it. This is that which profiteth you, could ye but comprehend it. Be fair, O peoples of the earth ! Which is preferable, this, or a temple which is built of clay ? Set your faces towards it. Thus have ye been commanded by God, the Help in Peril, the Self-Subsisting. Follow ye His bidding, and praise ye God, your Lord, for that which He hath bestowed upon you. He, verily, is the Truth. No God is there but He. He revealeth what He pleaseth, through His words ' Be and it is. '*"

Referring to this same subject, He, in one of His Tablets, thus addresses the followers of Jesus Christ : " *O concourse of the followers of the Son ! Verily, the Temple hath been built with the hands of the will of your Lord, the Almighty, the All-Bounteous. Bear, then, witness, O people, unto that which I say : Which is preferable, that which is built of clay, or that which is built by the hands of your Lord, the Revealer of*

1. Revelation of St. John XXI, 5.

2. Bahá'u'lláh.

*Veres? This is the Temple promised unto you in the Tablets. It calleth aloud: 'O followers of religions! Haste ye to attain unto Him Who is the Source of all causes, and follow not every infidel and doubter.'*

It should not be forgotten that, apart from these specific Tablets in which the kings of the earth are severally and collectively addressed, Bahá'u'lláh has revealed other Tablets—the Lawh-i-Ra's being an outstanding example—and interspersed the mass of His voluminous writings with unnumbered passages, in which direct addresses, as well as references, have been made to ministers, governments, and their accredited representatives. I am not concerned, however, with such addresses and references, which, vital as they are, cannot be regarded as being endowed with that peculiar pregnancy, which direct and specific messages, voiced by the Manifestation of God and directed to the world's Chief Magistrates in His day, must possess.

Dear friends! Enough has been said to portray the tribulations which, for so long a time, overwhelmed the Founders of so pre-eminent a Revelation, and which the world has so disastrously ignored. Sufficient attention has also been directed to the Messages addressed to those sovereign rulers who, either in the exercise of their unconditioned authority, have deliberately provoked these sufferings, or could have, in the plenitude of their power, arisen to mitigate their effect or deflect their tragic course. Let us now consider the consequences that have ensued. The reaction of these monarchs was, as already stated, varied and unmistakable and, as the march of events has gradually unfolded, disastrous in its consequences. One<sup>1</sup> of the most outstanding amongst these sovereigns treated the Divine Summons with gross disrespect, dismissing it with a curt and insolent reply, written by one of his ministers. Another<sup>2</sup> laid violent hold on the bearer of the Message, tortured, branded, and brutally slew him. Others preferred to maintain a contemptuous silence. All failed completely in their duty to arise and extend their assistance. Two<sup>3</sup> of them, in particular, prompted by the dual impulse of fear and anger, tightened their grip on the Cause they

1. Napoleon III.

2. The Shah of Iran.

3. The Sultan of Turkey and the Shah of Persia.

had jointly resolved to uproot. The one<sup>1</sup> condemned his Divine Prisoner to yet another banishment, to “*the most unsightly of cities<sup>2</sup> in appearance, the most detestable in climate, and the foulest in water,*” whilst the other,<sup>3</sup> powerless to lay hands on the Prime Mover of a hated Faith, subjected its adherents under his sway to abject and savage cruelties. The recital of Bahá'u'lláh's sufferings, embodied in those Messages, failed to evoke compassion in their hearts. His appeals, the like of which neither the annals of Christianity nor even those of Islám have recorded, were disdainfully rejected. The dark warnings He uttered were haughtily scorned. The bold challenges He issued were ignored. The chastisements He predicted they derisively brushed aside.

What, then—might we not consider—has, in the face of so complete and ignominious a rejection, happened, and is still happening, in the course, and particularly in the closing years, of this, the first Bahá'í century, a century fraught with such tumultuous sufferings and violent outrages for the persecuted Faith of Bahá'u'lláh? Empires fallen in dust, kingdoms subverted, dynasties extinguished, royalty besmirched, kings assassinated, poisoned, driven into exile, subjugated in their own realms, whilst the few remaining thrones are trembling with the repercussions of the fall of their fellows.

This process, so gigantic, so catastrophic, may be said to have had its inception on that memorable night when, in an obscure corner of Shiráz, the Báb, in the presence of the First Letter<sup>4</sup> to believe in Him, revealed the first chapter of His celebrated commentary on the Súrih of Joseph (The Qayyúmu'l-Asmá'), in which He trumpeted His Call to the sovereigns and princes of the earth. It passed from incubation to visible manifestation when Bahá'u'lláh's prophecies, enshrined for all time in the Súriy-i-Haykal, and uttered before Napoleon III's dramatic downfall and the self-imposed imprisonment of

1. The Sultan of Turkey.

2. Akká (Acre) in Palestine.

3. The Shah of Persia.

4. Bábú'l-Báb was the first to believe in the Báb.

Pope Pius IX in the Vatican, were fulfilled. It gathered momentum when, in the days of 'Abdu'l-Bahá, the Great War extinguished the Romanov, the Hohenzollern, and Hapsburg dynasties and converted powerful time-honored monarchies into Republics. It was further accelerated, soon after 'Abdu'l-Bahá's passing, by the demise of the Qájár dynasty in Persia, and the stupendous collapse of both the Sultanate and the Caliphate. It is still operating, under our very eyes, as we behold the fate which, in the course of this colossal and ravaging struggle, is successively overtaking the crowned heads of the European continent. Surely, no man, contemplating dispassionately the manifestations of this relentless revolutionizing process, within comparatively so short a time, can escape the conclusion that the last hundred years may well be regarded, in so far as the fortunes of royalty are concerned, as one of the most cataclysmic periods in the annals of mankind.

## Humiliation Immediate and Complete

Of all the monarchs of the earth, at the time when Bahá'u'lláh, proclaiming His Messages to them, revealed the Súriy-i-Múluk in Adrianople, the most august and influential were the French Emperor and the Supreme Pontiff. In the political and religious spheres they respectively held the foremost rank, and the humiliation both suffered was alike immediate and complete.

Napoleon III, son of Louis Bonaparte (brother of Napoleon I), was, few historians will deny, the most outstanding monarch of his day in the West. "The Emperor," it was said of him, "was the state." The French capital was the most attractive capital in Europe, the French court "the most brilliant and luxurious of the XIXth century." Possessed of a fixed and indestructible ambition, he aspired to emulate the example, and finish the interrupted work, of his imperial uncle. A dreamer, a conspirator, of a shifting nature, hypocritical and reckless, he, the heir to the Napoleonic throne, taking advantage of the policy which sought to foster the reviving

interest in the career of his great prototype, had sought to overthrow the monarchy. Failing in his attempt, he was deported to America, was later captured in the course of an attempted invasion of France, was condemned to perpetual captivity, and escaped to London, until in 1848, the Revolution brought about his return, and enabled him to overthrow the constitution, after which he was proclaimed emperor. Though able to initiate far-reaching movements, he possessed neither the sagacity nor the courage required to control them.

To this man, the last emperor of the French, who, through foreign conquest, had striven to endear his dynasty to the people, who even cherished the ideal of making France the center of a revived Roman Empire—to such a man the Exile of 'Akká, already thrice banished by Sultán 'Abdu'l-'Azíz, had transmitted, from behind the walls of the barracks in which He lay imprisoned, an Epistle which bore this indubitably clear arraignment and ominous prophecy : “*We testify that that which wakened thee was not their cry (Turks drowned in the Black Sea), but the promptings of thine own passions, for We tested thee, and found thee wanting. . . . Hadst thou been sincere in thy words, thou wouldst not have cast behind thy back the Book of God (previous Tablet), when it was sent unto thee by Him Who is the Almighty, the All-Wise. . . . For what thou hast done, thy kingdom shall be thrown into confusion, and thine empire shall pass from thine hands, as a punishment for that which thou hast wrought.*”

Bahá'u'lláh's previous Message, forwarded through one of the French ministers to the Emperor, had been accorded a welcome the nature of which can be conjectured from the words recorded in the “Epistle to the Son of the Wolf”: “*To this (first Tablet), however, he did not reply. After Our arrival in the Most Great Prison there reached Us a letter from his minister, the first part of which was in Persian, and the latter in his own handwriting. In it he was cordial, and wrote the following: ‘I have, as requested by you, delivered your letter, and until now have received no answer. We have, however, issued the necessary recommendations to our Minister in Constan-*

tinople and our consuls in those regions. If there be anything you wish done, inform us, and we will carry it out.' *From his words it became apparent that he understood the purpose of this Servant to have been a request for material assistance.*'

In His first Tablet Bahá'u'lláh, wishing to test the sincerity of the Emperor's motives, and deliberately assuming a meek and unprovocative tone, had, after expatiating on the sufferings He had endured, addressed him the following words : " *Two statements graciously uttered by the king of the age have reached the ears of these wronged ones. These pronouncements are, in truth, the king of all pronouncements, the like of which have never been heard from any sovereign. The first was the answer given the Russian Government when it inquired why the war (Crimean) was waged against it. Thou didst reply : 'The cry of the oppressed who, without guilt or blame, were drowned in the Black Sea wakened me at dawn. Wherefore, I took up arms against thee.' These oppressed ones, however, have suffered a greater wrong, and are in greater distress. Whereas the trials inflicted upon those people lasted but one day, the troubles borne by these servants have continued for twenty and five years, every moment of which has held for us a grievous affliction. The other weighty statement, which was indeed a wondrous statement manifested to the world, was this : 'Ours is the responsibility to avenge the oppressed and succor the helpless.' The fame of the Emperor's justice and fairness hath brought hope to a great many souls. It beseemeth the king of the age to inquire into the condition of such as have been wronged, and it behoveth him to extend his care to the weak. Verily, there hath not been, nor is there now, on earth any one as oppressed as we are, or as helpless as these wanderers.*"

It is reported that upon receipt of this first Message that superficial, tricky and pride-intoxicated monarch flung down the Tablet saying : " If this man is God, I am two gods !" The transmitter of the second Tablet had, it is reliably stated, in order to evade the strict surveillance of the guards, concealed it in his hat, and was able to deliver it to the French agent, who resided in ' Akká, and who, as attested by Nabil in his Narrative,

translated it into French and sent it to the Emperor, he himself becoming a believer when he had later witnessed the fulfilment of so remarkable a prophecy.

The significance of the sombre and pregnant words uttered by Bahá'u'lláh in His second Tablet was soon revealed. He who was actuated in provoking the Crimean War by his selfish desires, who was prompted by a personal grudge against the Russian Emperor, who was impatient to tear up the Treaty of 1815 in order to avenge the disaster of Moscow, and who sought to shed military glory over his throne, was soon himself engulfed by a catastrophe that hurled him in the dust, and caused France to sink from her pre-eminent station among the nations to that of a fourth Power in Europe.

The Battle of Sedan in 1870 sealed the fate of the French Emperor. The whole of his army was broken up and surrendered, constituting the greatest capitulation hitherto recorded in modern history. A crushing indemnity was exacted. He himself was taken prisoner. His only son, the Prince Imperial, was killed, a few years later, in the Zulu War. The Empire collapsed, its program unrealized. The Republic was proclaimed. Paris was subsequently besieged and capitulated. "The terrible year" marked by civil war, exceeding in its ferocity the Franco-German War, followed. William I, the Prussian king, was proclaimed German Emperor in the very palace which stood as a "mighty monument and symbol of the power and pride of Louis XIV, a power which had been secured to some extent by the humiliation of Germany." Deposed by a disaster "so appalling that it resounded throughout the world," this false and boastful monarch suffered in the end, and till his death, the same exile as that which, in the case of Bahá'u'lláh, he had so heartlessly ignored.

A humiliation less spectacular yet historically more significant awaited Pope Pius IX. It was to him who regarded himself as the Vicar of Christ that Bahá'u'lláh wrote that "*the Word which the Son (Jesus) concealed is made manifest*," that "*it hath been sent down in the form of the*

*human temple,<sup>1</sup>* that the Word was Himself, and He Himself the Father. It was to him who styling himself “the servant of the servants of God” that the Promised One of all ages, unveiling His station in its plenitude, announced that “*He Who is the Lord of Lords is come overshadowed with clouds.*” It was he, who, claiming to be the successor of St. Peter, was reminded by Bahá’u’lláh that “*this is the day whereon the Rock (Peter) crieth out and shouteth . . . saying: ‘Lo, the Father is come, and that which ye were promised in the Kingdom is fulfilled.’*” It was he, the wearer of the triple crown, who later became the first prisoner of the Vatican, who was commanded by the Divine Prisoner of ‘Akká to “*leave his palaces unto such as desire them,*” to “*sell all the embellished ornaments*” he possessed, and to “*expend them in the path of God,*” and to “*abandon his kingdom unto the kings,*” and emerge from his habitation with his face “*set towards the Kingdom.*”

Count Mastai-Ferretti, Bishop of Imola, the 254th pope since the inception of St. Peter’s primacy, who had been elevated to the apostolic throne two years after the Declaration of the Báb, and the duration of whose pontificate exceeded that of any of his predecessors, will be permanently remembered as the author of the Bull which declared the Immaculate Conception of the Blessed Virgin (1854), referred to in the Kitáb-i-Iqán,<sup>2</sup> to be a doctrine of the Church, and as the promulgator of the new dogma of Papal Infallibility (1870). Authoritarian by nature, a poor statesman, disinclined to conciliation, determined to preserve all his authority, he, while he succeeded through his assumption of an ultramontane attitude in defining further his position and in reinforcing his spiritual authority, failed, in the end, to maintain that temporal rule which, for so many centuries, had been exercised by the heads of the Catholic Church.

This temporal power had, throughout the ages, shrunk to insignificant proportions. The decades preceding its extinction were fraught with the gravest vicissitudes.

1. Human body.

2. Before Bahá’u’lláh announced himself, in 1863 A.D., as the Prophet, he wrote a book supporting the Báb’s claim as the Herald of the World Redeemer.

As the sun of Bahá'u'lláh's Revelation was mounting to full meridian splendor, the shadows that beset the dwindling patrimony of St. Peter were correspondingly deepening. The Tablet of Bahá'u'lláh, addressed to Pius IX, precipitated its extinction. A hasty glance at the course of its ebbing fortunes, during those decades, will suffice. Napoleon I had driven the Pope from his estates. The Congress of Vienna had re-established him as their head and their administration in the hands of the priests. Corruption, disorganization, impotence to insure internal security, the restoration of the inquisition, had induced an historian to assert that "no land of Italy, perhaps of Europe, except Turkey, is ruled as is this ecclesiastical state." Rome was "a city of ruins, both material and moral." Insurrections led to Austria's intervention. Five great Powers demanded the introduction of far-reaching reforms, which the Pope promised but failed to carry out. Austria again reasserted herself, and was opposed by France. Both watched each other on the Papal estates until 1838, when, on their withdrawal, absolutism was again restored. The Pope's temporal power was now denounced by some of his own subjects, heralding its extinction in 1870. Internal complications forced him to flee, in the dead of night and in the disguise of a humble priest, from Rome which was declared a republic. It was later restored by the French to its former status. The creation of the kingdom of Italy, the shifting policy of Napoleon III, the disaster of Sedan, the misdeeds of the Papal government denounced by Clarendon, at the Congress of Paris, terminating the Crimean War, as a "disgrace to Europe" sealed the fate of that tottering dominion.

In 1870, after Bahá'u'lláh had revealed His Epistle to Pius IX, King Victor Emmanuel I went to war with the Papal states, and his troops entered Rome and seized it. On the eve of its seizure, the Pope repaired to the Lateran and, despite his age and with his face bathed in tears, ascended on bended knees the Scala Santa. The following morning, as the cannonade began, he ordered the white flag to be hoisted above the dome of St. Peter. Despoiled, he refused to recognize this "creation of revolution,"

excommunicated the invaders of his states, denounced Victor Emmanuel as the “robber King” and as “forgetful of every religious principle, despising every right, trampling upon every law.” Rome, “the Eternal City, on which rest twenty-five centuries of glory,” and over which the Popes had ruled in unchallengeable right for ten centuries, finally became the seat of the new kingdom, and the scene of that humiliation which Bahá’u’lláh had anticipated and which the Prisoner of the Vatican had imposed upon himself.

“The last years of the old Pope,” writes a commentator on his life, “were filled with anguish. To his physical infirmities was added the sorrow of beholding, all too often, the Faith outraged in the very heart of Rome, the religious orders despoiled and persecuted, the Bishops and priests debarred from exercising their functions.”

Every effort to retrieve the situation created in 1870 proved fruitless. The Archbishop of Posen went to Versailles to solicit Bismarck’s intervention in behalf of the Papacy, but was coldly received. Later a Catholic party was organized in Germany to bring political pressure on the German Chancellor. All, however, was in vain. The mighty process already referred to had to pursue inexorably its course. Even now, after the lapse of above half a century, the so-called restoration of temporal sovereignty has but served to throw into greater relief the helplessness of this erstwhile potent Prince, at whose name kings trembled and to whose dual sovereignty they willingly submitted. This temporal sovereignty, practically confined to the minuscule City of the Vatican, and leaving Rome the undisputed possession of a secular monarchy, has been obtained at the price of unreserved recognition, so long withheld, of the Kingdom of Italy. The Treaty of the Lateran, claiming to have resolved once and for all the Roman Question, has indeed assured to a secular Power, in respect of the Enclaved City, a liberty of action which is fraught with uncertainty and peril. “The two souls of the Eternal City,” a Catholic writer has observed, “have been separated from each other, only to collide more severely than ever before.”

Well might the Sovereign Pontiff recall the reign of the most powerful among his predecessors, Innocent III, who, during the eighteen years of his pontificate, raised and deposed the kings and the emperors, whose interdicts deprived nations of the exercise of Christian worship, at the feet of whose legate the King of England surrendered his crown, and at whose voice the fourth and the fifth crusades were both undertaken.

Might not the process, to which reference has already been made, manifest, in the course of its operation, during the tumultuous years in store for mankind, and in this same domain, a commotion still more devastating than it has yet produced?

The dramatic collapse of both the Third Empire and the Napoleonic dynasty, the virtual extinction of the temporal sovereignty of the Supreme Pontiff, in the life-time of Bahá'u'lláh, were but the precursors of still greater catastrophes that may be said to have marked the ministry of 'Abdu'l-Bahá. The forces unleashed by a conflict, the full significance of which still remains unfathomed, and which may be considered as a prelude to this, the most devastating of all wars, can well be regarded as the occasion of these dreadful catastrophes. The progress of the War of 1914-1918 dethroned the House of Romanov, while its termination precipitated the downfall of both the Hapsburg and Hohenzollern dynasties.

## The Rise of Bolshevism

The rise of Bolshevism, born amidst the fires of that inconclusive struggle, shook the throne of the Czars and overthrew it. Nicolaevich Alexander II, whom Bahá'u'lláh had commanded in His Tablet to "*arise... and summon the nations unto God*," who had been thrice warned : "*beware lest thy desire deter thee from turning towards the face of thy Lord*," "*beware lest thou barter away this sublime station*," "*beware lest thy sovereignty withhold thee from Him Who is the Supreme Sovereign*," was not indeed the last of the Czars to rule his country, but rather the inaugurator of a retro-

gressive policy which in the end proved fatal to both himself and his dynasty.

In the latter part of his reign he initiated a reactionary policy which, causing widespread disillusionment, gave rise to Nihilism, which, as it spread, ushered in a period of terrorism of unexampled violence, leading in its turn to several attempts on his life, and culminating in his assassination. Stern repression guided the policy of his successor, Alexander III, who "assumed an attitude of defiant hostility to innovators and liberals." The tradition of unqualified absolutism, of extreme religious orthodoxy was maintained by the still more severe Nicolas II, the last of the Czars, who, guided by the counsels of a man who was "the very incarnation of a narrow-minded, stiff-necked despotism," and aided by a corrupt bureaucracy, and humiliated by the disastrous effects of a foreign war, increased the general discontent of the masses, both intellectuals and peasants. Driven for a time into subterranean channels, and intensified by military reverses, it exploded at last in the midst of the Great War, in the form of a Revolution which, in the principles it challenged, the institutions it subverted, and the havoc it wrought, has scarcely a parallel in modern history.

A great trembling seized and rocked the foundations of that country. The light of religion was dimmed. Ecclesiastical institutions of every denomination were swept away. The state religion was disendowed, persecuted, and abolished. A far-flung empire was dismembered. A militant, triumphant proletariat exiled the intellectuals, and plundered and massacred the nobility. Civil war and disease decimated a population, already in the throes of agony and despair. And, finally, the Chief Magistrate of a mighty dominion, together with his consort, and his family, and his dynasty, were swept into the vortex of this great convulsion, and perished.

The very ordeal that heaped such dire misfortunes on the empire of the Czars brought about, in its concluding stages the fall of the almighty German Kaiser as well as that of the inheritor of the once famed Holy Roman Empire. It shattered the whole fabric of Imperial Ger-

many, which arose out of the disaster that engulfed the Napoleonic dynasty, and dealt the Dual Monarchy its death-blow.

Almost half a century before, Bahá'u'lláh, Who had predicted, in clear and resounding terms, the ignominious fall of the successor of the great Napoleon, had, in the Kitáb-i-Aqdas, addressed to Kaiser William I, the newly-acclaimed victor, a no less significant warning, and prophesied, in His apostrophe to the banks of the Rhine, in words equally unambiguous, the mourning that would afflict the capital of the newly-federated empire.

*“Do thou remember,”* Bahá'u'lláh thus addressed him, *“the one (Napoleon) whose power transcended thy power, and whose station excelled thy station . . . Think deeply, O king, concerning him, and concerning them who, like unto thee, have conquered cities and ruled over men.”* And again: *“O banks of the Rhine! We have seen you covered with gore, inasmuch as the swords of retribution were drawn against you; and you shall have another turn. And We hear the lamentations of Berlin, though she be today in conspicuous glory.”*

On him who, in his old age, sustained two attempts upon his life by the advocates of the rising tide of socialism; on his son Frederick III, whose three months' reign was overshadowed by mortal disease; and finally on his grandson, William II, the self-willed and overweening monarch and wrecker of his own empire—on these fell, in varying degrees, the full weight of the responsibilities consequent to these dire pronouncements.

William I, first German Emperor and seventh king of Prussia, whose entire life-time had, up to the date of his accession, been spent in the army, was a militaristic, autocratic ruler, imbued with antiquated ideas, who initiated, with the aid of a statesman rightly regarded as “one of the geniuses of his century,” a policy which may be said to have inaugurated a new era not only for Prussia but for the world. This policy was pursued with characteristic thoroughness and perfected through the repressive measures that were taken to safeguard and uphold it, through the wars that were waged for its realization, and the political combinations that were subsequently formed to exalt

and consolidate it, combinations that were fraught with such dreadful consequences to the European continent.

William II, temperamentally dictatorial, politically inexperienced, militarily aggressive, religiously insincere, posed as the apostle of European peace, yet actually insisted on “the mailed fist” and “the shining armor.” Irresponsible, indiscreet, inordinately ambitious, his first act was to dismiss that sagacious statesman, the true founder of his empire, to whose sagacity Bahá’u’lláh had paid tribute, and to the unwisdom of whose imperial and ungrateful master ‘Abdu’l-Bahá had testified. War indeed became a religion of his country, and by enlarging the scope of his multifarious activities, he proceeded to prepare the way for that final catastrophe that was to dethrone him and his dynasty. And when the war broke out, and the might of his armies seemed to have overpowered his adversaries, and the news of his triumphs was noised abroad, reverberating as far as Persia, voices were raised ridiculing those passages of the Kitáb-i-Aqdas which so clearly foreshadowed the misfortunes that were to befall his capital. Suddenly, however, swift and unforeseen reverses fatally overtook him. Revolution broke out. William II, deserting his armies, fled ignominiously to Holland, followed by the Crown Prince. The princes of the German states abdicated. A period of chaos ensued. The communist flag was hoisted in the capital, which became a cauldron of confusion and civil strife. The Kaiser signed his abdication. The Constitution of Weimar established the Republic, bringing the tremendous structure, so elaborately reared through a policy of blood and iron, crashing to the ground. All the efforts to that end, which through internal legislation and foreign wars had, ever since the accession of William I to the Prussian throne, been assiduously exerted, came to naught. “*The lamentations of Berlin*,” tortured by the terms of a treaty monstrous in its severity, were raised, contrasting with the hilarious shouts of victory that rang, half a century before, in the Hall of Mirrors of the Palace of Versailles.

The Hapsburg monarch, heir of centuries of glorious history, simultaneously toppled from his throne. It was

Francis Joseph, whom Bahá'u'lláh chided in the Kitáb-i-Aqdas for having failed in his duty to investigate His Cause, let alone to seek His presence, when so easily accessible to him in the course of his visit to the Holy Land. “*Thou passed Him by,*” He thus reproves the pilgrim-emperor, “*and inquired not about Him . . . We have been with thee at all times, and found thee clinging unto the Branch and heedless of the Root . . . Open thine eyes, that thou mayest behold this Glorious Vision and recognize Him Whom thou invokest in the daytime and in the night-season, and gaze on the Light that shineth above this luminous Horizon.*”

The House of Hapsburg, in which the Imperial Title had remained practically hereditary for almost five centuries, was, ever since those words were uttered, being increasingly menaced by the forces of internal disintegration, and was sowing the seeds of an external conflict, to both of which it ultimately succumbed. Francis Joseph, Emperor of Austria, King of Hungary, a reactionary ruler, re-established old abuses, ignored the rights of nationalities, and restored that bureaucratic centralization that proved in the end so injurious to his empire. Repeated tragedies darkened his reign. His brother Maximilian was shot in Mexico. The Crown Prince Rudolph perished in a dishonorable affair. The Empress was assassinated in Geneva. Archduke Francis Ferdinand and his wife were murdered in Serajevo, kindling a war in the midst of which the Emperor himself died, closing a reign which is unsurpassed by any other reign in the disasters it brought to the nation.

## End of the Holy Roman Empire

Belated efforts had been made to steady his tottering throne. The “ramshackle empire” a medley of states, races, and languages, was, however, relentlessly and rapidly disintegrating. The political and economic situation was desperate. The defeat of Austria and Hungary, in that same war, sounded its death-knell and brought its dismemberment. Hungary sundered its connection. The conglomerate realm was carved up, and all that was left of

the once formidable Holy Roman Empire was a shrunken republic that led a miserable existence until, in more recent times, it was, unlike its sister nation, completely extinguished and wiped off the political map of Europe.

Such was the fate of the Napoleonic, the Romanov, the Hohenzollern, and the Hapsburg empires, whose rulers, together with the sovereign occupant of the Papal throne, were individually addressed by the Pen of the Most High, and who were respectively chastised, forewarned, condemned, rebuked and admonished. What of the fate of those sovereigns, who, exercising direct political jurisdiction over the Faith, its Founders, and followers, and within the radius of whose domains that Faith was born and first spread, were at liberty to crucify its Herald, banish its Founder, and mow down its adherents?

## What of Turkey and Persia?

Already in the lifetime of Bahá'u'lláh and later during the ministry of 'Abdu'l-Bahá, the first blows of a slow yet steady and relentless retribution were falling alike upon the rulers of the Turkish House of 'Uthmán and of the Qájár dynasty in Persia—the arch-enemies of God's infant Faith.<sup>1</sup> Sultán 'Abdu'l-Azíz fell from power and was murdered soon after Bahá'u'lláh's banishment from Adrianople, while Násiri'd-Dín Sháh succumbed to an assassin's pistol, during 'Abdu'l-Bahá's incarceration in the fortress-town of 'Akká. It was reserved, however, for the Formative Period of the Faith of God—the Age of the birth and rise of its Administrative Order—which, as stated in a previous communication, is through its unfoldment casting such a turmoil in the world, to witness not only the extinction of both of these dynasties, but also the abolition of the twin institutions of the Sultanate and the Caliphate.

Of the two despots 'Abdu'l-'Azíz was the more powerful, the more exalted in rank, the more pre-eminent in guilt, and the more concerned with the tribulations and fortunes of the Founder of our Faith. He it was who,

---

1. The Baháí Faith.

through his farmáns, had thrice banished Bahá'u'lláh, and in whose dominions the Manifestation of God spent almost the whole of His forty years captivity. It was during his reign and that of his nephew and successor, 'Abdu'l-Hamid II, that the Center<sup>1</sup> of the Covenant of God had to endure, for no less than forty years, in the fortress-town of 'Akká, an incarceration fraught with so many perils, affronts and privations.

"Hearken, O king!" is the summons issued to Sultán 'Abdu'l-'Aziz by Bahá'u'lláh, "*to the speech of Him that speaketh the truth, Him that doth not ask thee to recompense Him with the things God hath chosen to bestow upon thee, Him Who unerringly treadeth the Straight Path. . . . Observe, O king, with thine inmost heart and with thy whole being, the precepts of God, and walk not in the paths of the oppressor . . . Place not thy reliance on thy treasures. Put thy whole confidence in the grace of God, thy Lord. . . . Overstep not the bounds of moderation, and deal justly with them that serve thee . . . Set before thine eyes God's unerring Balance, and, as one standing in His presence, weigh in that Balance thine actions, every day, every moment of thy life. Bring thyself to account ere thou art summoned to a reckoning, on the Day when no man shall have strength to stand for fear of God, the Day when the hearts of the heedless ones shall be made to tremble.*"

"The day is approaching," Bahá'u'lláh thus prophesies in the Lawh-i-Ra'ís, "*when the Land of Mystery (Adrianople), and what is beside it shall be changed, and shall pass out of the hands of the king, and commotions shall appear, and the voice of lamentation shall be raised, and the evidences of mischief shall be revealed on all sides, and confusion shall spread by reason of that which hath befallen these captives at the hands of the hosts of oppression. The course of things shall be altered, and conditions shall wax so grievous, that the very sands on the desolate hills will moan, and the trees on the mountain will weep, and blood will flow out of all things. Then wilt thou behold the people in sore distress.*"

"Soon," He, moreover has written, "*will He seize you in His wrathful anger, and sedition will be stirred up in your midst, and your dominions will be disrupted. Then will ye*

<sup>1</sup>. Abdu'l-Baha, the eldest son of Bahá'u'lláh.

*bewail and lament, and will find none to help or succor you. . . . Several times calamities have overtaken you, and yet ye failed utterly to take heed. One of them was the conflagration which devoured most of the City (Constantinople) with the flames of justice, and concerning which many poems were written, stating that no such fire had ever been witnessed. And yet, ye waxed more heedless. . . . Plague, likewise, broke out, and ye still failed to give heed! Be expectant, however, for the wrath of God is ready to overtake you. Ere long will ye behold that which hath been sent down from the Pen of My command.”*

“By your deeds” He, in another Tablet, anticipating the fall of the Sultanate and the Caliphate, thus reproves the combined forces of Sunnī and Shī‘ih Islám, “*the exalted station of the people hath been abased, the standard of Islám hath been reversed, and its mighty throne hath fallen.*”

And finally, in the Kitáb-i-Aqdas, revealed soon after Bahá’u’lláh’s banishment to ‘Akka, He thus apostrophizes the seat of Turkish imperial power: “*O Spot that art situate on the shores of the two seas! The throne of tyranny hath, verily, been established upon thee, and the flame of hatred hath been kindled within thy bosom. . . . Thou art indeed filled with manifest pride. Hath thine outward splendor made thee vainglorious? By Him Who is the Lord of mankind! It shall soon perish, and thy daughters, and thy widows, and all the kindreds that dwell within thee shall lament. Thus informeth thee, the All-Knowing, the All-Wise.*”

Indeed, in a most remarkable passage in the Lawh-i-Fu’ád, wherein mention has been made of the death of Fu’ád Páshá, the Turkish Minister of Foreign Affairs, the fall of the Sultán himself is unmistakably foretold: “*Soon will We dismiss the one who was like unto him, and will lay hold on their Chief who ruleth the land, and I, verily, am the Almighty, the All-Compelling.*”

The Sultán’s reaction to these words, bearing upon his person, his empire, his throne, his capital, and his ministers, can be gathered from the recital of the sufferings he inflicted on Bahá’u’lláh, and already referred to in the beginning of these pages. The extinction of the “*outward splendor*” surrounding that proud seat of Imperial power is the theme I now proceed to expose.

## The Doom of Imperial Turkey

A cataclysmic process, one of the most remarkable in modern history, was set in motion ever since Bahá'u'lláh, while a prisoner in Constantinople, delivered to a Turkish official His Tablet, addressed to Sultán 'Abdu'l-'Azíz and his ministers, to be transmitted to 'Alí Páshá, the Grand Vizir. It was this Tablet which, as attested by that officer and affirmed by Nabil in his chronicle, affected the Vizir so profoundly that he paled while reading it. This process received fresh impetus after the Lawh-i-Ra'ís was revealed on the morrow of its Author's final banishment from Adrianople to 'Akká. Relentless, devastating, and with ever-increasing momentum, it ominously unfolded, damaging the prestige of the Empire, dismembering its territory, dethroning its sultáns, sweeping away their dynasty, degrading and deposing its caliph, disestablishing its religion, and extinguishing its glory. The "sick man"<sup>1</sup> of Europe, whose condition had been unerringly diagnosed by the Divine Physician, and whose doom was pronounced inevitable, fell a prey, during the reign of five successive sultáns, all degenerate, all deposed, to a series of convulsions which, in the end, proved fatal to his life. Imperial Turkey that had, under 'Abdu'l-Majíd, been admitted into the European Concert, and had emerged victorious from the Crimean War, entered, under his successor, 'Abdu'l-'Azíz, upon a period of swift decline, culminating, soon after 'Abdu'l-Bahá's passing, in the doom which the judgment of God had pronounced against it.

Risings in Crete and the Balkans marked the reign of this, the 32nd sultán of his dynasty, a despot whose mind was vacuous, whose recklessness was extreme, whose extravagance knew no bounds. The Eastern Question entered upon an acute phase. His gross misrule gave rise to movements which were to exercise far-reaching effects upon his realm, while his continual and enormous borrowings, leading to a state of semi-bankruptcy, introduced the principle of foreign control over the finances

---

i. The Sultan of Turkey.

of his empire. A conspiracy, leading to a palace revolution, finally deposed him. A fatva of the muftí denounced his incapacity and extravagance. Four days later he was assassinated, and was succeeded by his nephew, Murád V, whose mind had been reduced to a nullity by intemperance and by a long seclusion in the Cage. Declared to be imbecile, he, after a reign of three months, was deposed and was succeeded by the subtle, the resourceful, the suspicious, the tyrannical 'Abdu'l-Hamíd II who "proved to be the most mean, cunning, untrustworthy and cruel intriguer of the long dynasty of 'Uthmán." "No one knew," it was written of him, "from day to day who was the person on whose advice the sultán overruled his ostensible ministers, whether a favorite lady of his harem, or a eunuch, or some fanatical dervish, or an astrologer, or a spy." The Bulgarian atrocities heralded the black reign of this "Great Assassin," which thrilled Europe with horror, and were characterized by Gladstone as "the basest and blackest outrages upon record in that (XIX) century." The War of 1877-8 accelerated the process of the empire's dismemberment. No less than eleven million people were emancipated from Turkish yoke. The Russian troops occupied Adrianople. Serbia, Montenegro and Rumania proclaimed their independence. Bulgaria became a self-governing state, tributary to the sultán. Cyprus and Egypt were occupied. The French assumed a protectorate over Tunis. Eastern Rumelia was ceded to Bulgaria. The wholesale massacres of Armenians, involving directly and indirectly a hundred thousand souls, were but a foretaste of the still more extensive blood-baths to come in a later reign. Bosnia and Herzegovina were lost to Austria. Bulgaria obtained her independence. Universal contempt and hatred of an infamous sovereign, shared alike by his Christian and Muslim subjects, finally culminated in a revolution, swift and sweeping. The Committee of Young Turks secured from the Shaykhul-Islám the condemnation of the sultán. Despised and friendless, execrated by his subjects, and despised by his fellow-rulers, he was forced to abdicate, and was made a prisoner of state, thus ending a reign

“more disastrous in its immediate losses of territory and in the certainty of others to follow, and more conspicuous for the deterioration of the condition of his subjects, than that of any other of his twenty-three degenerate predecessors since the death of Soliman the Magnificent.”

The end of so shameful a reign was but the beginning of a new era which, however auspiciously hailed at first, was destined to witness the collapse of the Ottoman ram-shackle and worm-eaten state. Muhammad V, a brother of ‘Abdu’l-Hamíd II, an absolute nonentity, failed to improve the status of his subjects. The follies of his government ultimately sealed the doom of the empire. The War of 1914-18 provided the occasion. Military reverses brought to a head the forces that were sapping its foundations. While the war was still being fought the defection of the Sherif of Mecca and the revolt of the Arabian provinces portended the convulsion which was to seize the Turkish throne. The precipitate flight and complete destruction of the army of Jamál Páshá, the commander-in-chief in Syria—he who had sworn to raze to the ground, after his triumphant return from Egypt, the Tomb of Bahá’u’lláh, and to publicly crucify the Center of His Covenant in a public square of Constantinople—was the signal for the nemesis that was to overtake an empire in distress. Nine-tenths of the large Turkish armies had melted away. A fourth of the whole population had perished from war, disease, famine and massacre.

A new ruler, Muhammad VI, the last of the twenty-five successive degenerate sultáns, had meanwhile succeeded his wretched brother. The edifice of the empire was now quaking and tottering to its fall. Muṣṭafá Kamál dealt it the final blows. Turkey, that had already shrunk to a small Asiatic state, became a republic. The sultán was deposed, the Ottoman sultanate was ended, a rulership that had remained unbroken for six and a half centuries was extinguished. An empire which had stretched from the center of Hungary to the Persian Gulf and the Sudan, and from the Caspian Sea to Oran in Africa, had now dwindled to a small Asiatic republic. Constantinople itself, which, after the fall of Byzantium, had been honored

as the splendid metropolis of the Roman Empire, and had been made the capital of the Ottoman government was abandoned by its conquerors, and stripped of its pomp and glory—a mute reminder of the base tyranny that had for so long stained its throne.

Such, in their bare outline, were the awful evidences of that retributive justice which so tragically afflicted 'Abdu'l-'Azíz, his successors, his throne and his dynasty. What of Násiri'd-Dín Sháh, the other partner in that imperial conspiracy which sought to extirpate, root and branch, the budding Faith of God? His reaction to the Divine Message borne to him by the fearless Bádí,<sup>1</sup> the "Pride of Martyrs," who had spontaneously dedicated himself to this purpose, was characteristic of that implacable hatred which, throughout his reign, glowed so fiercely in his breast.

## Divine Retribution on the Qájár Dynasty

The French Emperor had, it was reported, flung away Bahá'u'lláh's Tablet, and directed his minister, as Bahá'u'lláh Himself asserts, to address to its Author an irreverent reply. The Grand Vizir of 'Abdu'l-'Azíz, it is reliably stated, blanched while reading the communication addressed to his Imperial master and his ministers, and made the following comment: "It is as if the king of kings were issuing his behest to his humblest vassal king, and regulating his conduct!" Queen Victoria, it is said, upon reading the Tablet revealed for her remarked: "If this is of God, it will endure; if not, it can do no harm." It was reserved for Násiri'd-Dín Sháh, however, to wreak, at the instigation of the divines, his vengeance on One<sup>2</sup> Whom he could no longer personally chastise, by arresting His messenger,<sup>1</sup> a lad of about seventeen, by freighting him with chains, by torturing him on the rack, and finally slaying him:

1. The name of a Baháí who conveyed Bahá'u'lláh's letter to the Shah of Persia and was put to death by the order of the Shah.

2. Bahá'u'lláh.

To this despotic sovereign Bahá'u'lláh, Who denounced him as the “Prince of Oppressors,” and as one who would soon be made “an object-lesson for the world,” had written: “Look upon this Youth,<sup>1</sup> O king, with the eyes of justice; judge thou, then, with truth concerning what hath befallen Him. Of a verity, God hath made thee His shadow amongst men, and the sign of His power unto all that dwell on earth.” And again: “O king! Wert thou to incline thine ears unto the shrill of the Pen of Glory and the cooing of the Dove of Eternity . . . thou wouldest attain unto a station from which thou wouldest behold in the world of being naught save the effulgence of the Adored One, and wouldest regard thy sovereignty as the most contemptible of thy possessions, abandoning it to whosoever might desire it, and setting thy face toward the horizon aglow with the light of His countenance.” And again: “We fain would hope, however, that His Majesty the Sháh will himself examine these matters, and bring hope to the hearts. That which We have submitted to thee is indeed for thine highest good.”

This hope, however, was to remain unfulfilled. It was indeed shattered by a reign which had been inaugurated by the execution of the Báb, and the imprisonment of Bahá'u'lláh in the Síyáh-Chál of Tíhrán, by a sovereign who had repeatedly instigated Bahá'u'lláh's successive banishments, and by a dynasty that had been sullied by the slaughter of no less than twenty thousand of His followers. The Sháh's dramatic assassination, the ignoble rule of the last sovereigns of the House of Qájár, and the extinction of that dynasty, were signal instances of the Divine retribution which these horrid atrocities had provoked.

The Qájárs, members of the alien Turkoman tribe, had, indeed, usurped the Persian throne. Aqá Muhammad Khán, the eunuch Sháh and founder of the dynasty, was such an atrocious, avaricious, blood-thirsty tyrant that the memory of no Persian is so detested and universally execrated as his memory. The record of his reign and that of his immediate successors is one of vandalism, of internal warfare, of recalcitrant and rebellious chieftains, of brigandage and medieval oppression, whilst the annals of

---

1. Baha'u'llah.

the reigns of the later Qájárs are marked by the stagnation of the nation, the illiteracy of the people, the corruption and incompetence of the government, the scandalous intrigues of the court, the decadence of the princes, the irresponsibility and extravagance of the sovereign, and his abject subservience to a notoriously degraded clerical order.

The successor of Aqá Muhammad Khán, the uxorious, philo-progenitive Fath-‘Alí Sháh, the so-called “Darius of the Age,” was a vain, an arrogant, and unscrupulous miser, notorious for the enormous number of his wives and concubines numbering above a thousand, his incalculable progeny, and the disasters which his rule brought upon his country. He it was who commanded that his vizir, to whom he owed his throne, be cast into a cauldron of boiling oil. As to his successor, the bigoted Muhammad Sháh, one of his earliest acts, definitely condemned by the pen of Bahá’u’lláh, was the order to strangle his first minister, the illustrious Qá’im-Maqám, immortalized by that same pen as the “*Prince of the City of Statesmanship and Literary Accomplishment*,” and to have him replaced by that low-bred, consummate scoundrel, Hájí Mírzá Aqásí, who brought the country to the verge of bankruptcy and revolution. It was this same Sháh who refused to interview the Báb and imprisoned Him in Adhirbáján, and who, at the age of forty, was afflicted by a complication of maladies to which he succumbed, hastening the doom forecast in these words of the Qayyúmu'l-Asmá : “*I swear by God, O Sháh ! If thou shovest enmity unto Him Who is His Remembrance, God will, on the Day of Resurrection, condemn thee, before the kings, unto hell fire, and thou shalt not, in very truth, find on that day any helper except God, the Exalted.*”

Násiri'd-Dín Sháh, a selfish, capricious, imperious monarch, succeeded to the throne, and, for half a century, was destined to remain the sole arbiter of the fortunes of his hapless country. A disastrous obscurantism, a chaotic administration in the provinces, the disorganization of the finances of the realm, the intrigues, the vindictiveness, and profligacy of the pampered and greedy courtiers, who buzzed and swarmed round his throne, his own despotism,

which, but for the restraining fear of European public opinion and the desire to be thought well of in the capitals of the West, would have been more cruel and savage, were the distinguishing features of the bloody reign of one who styled himself "Footpath of Heaven," and "Asylum of the Universe." A triple darkness of chaos, bankruptcy and oppression enveloped the country. His own assassination was the first portent of the revolution which was to restrict the prerogatives of his son and successor, depose the last two monarchs of the House of Qájár, and extinguish their dynasty. On the eve of his jubilee, which was to inaugurate a new era, and the celebration of which had been elaborately prepared, he fell, in the shrine of Sháh 'Abdu'l-Azím, a victim to an assassin's pistol, his dead body driven back to his capitol, propped up in the royal carriage in front of his Grand Vizir, in order to defer the news of his murder.

"It was whispered," writes an eye witness of both the ceremony and the assassination, "that the day of the Sháh's celebration was to be the greatest in the history of Persia.... Prisoners were to be released without condition, and a general amnesty was to be proclaimed: peasants were promised exemption from taxes for at least two years.... the poor were to be fed for months. Ministers and officials were already intriguing for honors and pension from the Sháh. Shrines and sacred places were to open their gates to all wayfarers and pilgrims, and the siyyids and mullás were taking cough medicine to clear their throats to sing and chant the praises of the Sháh in all the pulpits. The mosques were swept and prepared for general meetings and public prayers in behalf of the Sovereign.... Sacred fountains were enlarged to hold more holy water, and the rightful authorities had foreseen that many miracles might take place on the day of the jubilee, with the aid of these fountains.... The Sháh had declared... that he would renounce his prerogatives as despot, and proclaim himself 'The Majestic Father of all the Persians.' The city authority was to relax its vigilant watch. No record was to be kept of the strangers who flocked to the caravanserais, and the population was to be left free to

wander the streets during the whole night." Even the great mujtahids had, according to what had been reported to that same eye witness, "decided, for the time being, to discontinue persecuting the Bábís and other infidels."

Thus fell the one whose reign will remain forever associated with the most heinous crime in history—the martyrdom of that One<sup>1</sup> Whom the Supreme Manifestation of God proclaimed to be the "*Point round Whom the realities of the Prophets and Messengers revolve.*" In a Tablet in which the pen of Bahá'u'lláh condemns him, we read: "*Among them (kings of the earth) is the King of Persia, who suspended Him Who is the Temple of the Cause (the Báb) in the air, and put Him to death with such cruelty that all created things, and the inmates of Paradise, and the Concourse on high wept for Him. He slew, moreover, some of Our kindred, and plundered Our property, and made Our family captives in the hands of the oppressors. Once and again he imprisoned Me. By God, the True One! None can reckon the things which befell Me in prison, save God, the Reckoner, the Omniscient, the Almighty. Subsequently he banished Me and My family from My country, whereupon We arrived in 'Iràq in evident sorrow. We tarried there until the time when the King of Rúm (Sultán of Turkey) arose against Us, and summoned Us unto the seat of his sovereignty. When We reached it there flowed over Us that whereat the King of Persia rejoiced. Later We entered this Prison, wherein the hands of Our loved ones were torn from the hem of Our robe. In such a manner hath he dealt with Us !*"

The days of the Qájár dynasty were now numbered. The torpor of the national consciousness had vanished. The reign of Násiri'd-Dín Sháh's successor, Muzaffari'd-Dín Sháh, a weak and timid creature, extravagant and lavish to his courtiers, led the country down the broad road to ruin. The movement in favor of a constitution, limiting the sovereign's prerogatives, gathered force, and culminated in the signature of the constitution by the dying Sháh, who expired a few days later. Muhammad-‘Alí Sháh, a despot of the worst type, unprincipled and avaricious, succeeded to the throne. Hostile to the constitution, he, by his summary action, involving the bombard-

---

i. The Bab.

ment of the Baháristán, where the Assembly met, precipitated a revolution which led to his deposition by the nationalists. Accepting, after much bargaining, a large pension, he ignominiously withdrew to Russia. The boy-king, Ahmad Sháh, who succeeded him, was a mere cipher and careless of his duties. The crying needs of his country continued to be ignored. Increasing anarchy, the impotence of the central government, the state of the national finances, the progressive deterioration of the general condition of the country, practically abandoned by a sovereign who preferred the gaieties and frivolities of society life in the European capitals to the discharge of the stern and urgent responsibilities which the plight of his nation demanded, sounded the death-knell of a dynasty which, it was generally felt, had forfeited the crown. Whilst abroad, on one of his periodic visits, parliament deposed him, and proclaimed the extinction of his dynasty, which had occupied the throne of Persia for a hundred and thirty years, whose rulers proudly claimed no less a descent than from Japhet, son of Noah, and whose successive monarchs, with only one exception, were either assassinated, deposed, or struck down by mortal disease.

Their myriad progeny, a veritable “beehive of princelings,” a “race of royal drones,” were both a disgrace and a menace to their countrymen. Now, however, these luckless descendants of a fallen house, shorn of all power, and some of them reduced even to beggary, proclaim, in their distress, the consequences of the abominations which their progenitors have perpetrated. Swelling the ranks of the ill-fated scions of the House of ‘Uthmán, and of the rulers of the Romanov, the Hohenzollern, the Hapsburg, and the Napoleonic dynasties, they roam the face of the earth, scarcely aware of the character of those forces which have operated such tragic revolutions in their lives, and so powerfully contributed to their present plight.

Already grandsons of both Náṣiri’d-Dín Sháh and of Sultán ‘Abdu'l-‘Azíz have, in their powerlessness and destitution, turned to the World Center<sup>1</sup> of the Faith of

---

1. Shoghi Effendi, the author of this book,—who is the present Guardian of the Baháí Faith.

Bahá'u'lláh, and sought respectively political aid and pecuniary assistance. In the case of the former, the request was promptly and firmly refused,<sup>1</sup> whilst in the case of the latter it was unhesitatingly offered.

## The Decline in the Fortunes of Royalty.

And as we survey in other fields the decline in the fortunes of royalty, whether in the years immediately preceding the Great War or after, and contemplate the fate that has overtaken the Chinese Empire, the Portuguese and Spanish Monarchies, and more recently in the vicissitudes that have afflicted, and are still afflicting, the sovereigns of Norway, of Denmark and of Holland, and observe the impotence of their fellow-sovereigns and note the fear and trembling that has seized their thrones, may we not associate their plight with the opening passages of the Súriy-i-Málúk, which, in view of their momentous significance, I feel impelled to quote a second time : “ *Fear God, O concourse of kings, and suffer not yourselves to be deprived of this most sublime grace . . . Set your hearts towards the face of God, and abandon that which your desires have bidden you to follow, and be not of those who perish . . . Ye examined not His (the Báb) Cause, when so to do had been better for you than all that the sun shineth upon, could ye but perceive it . . . Beware that ye be not careless henceforth, as ye have been careless aforetime . . . My face hath come forth from the veils, and shed its radiance upon all that is in heaven and on earth, and yet ye turned not towards Him . . . Arise then . . . and make ye amends for that which hath escaped you . . . If ye pay no heed unto the counsels which, in peerless and unequivocal language, We have revealed in this Tablet, Divine chastisement shall assail you from every direction, and the sentence of His justice shall be pronounced against you . . . Twenty years have passed, O kings, during which We have, each day, tasted the agony of a fresh tribulation . . . Though aware of most of Our afflictions, ye, nevertheless, have failed to stay the hand of the aggressor. For is it not your clear duty to restrain the tyranny of the oppressor, and to deal equitably with your subjects, that your high sense of justice may be fully demonstrated to all mankind?* ”

---

i. Because the request was for a political agitation in Iran.

No wonder that Bahá'u'lláh, in view of the treatment meted out to Him by the sovereigns of the earth, should, as already quoted, have written these words : “ *From two ranks amongst men power hath been seized : kings and ecclesiastics.* ” Indeed, He even goes further, and states in His Tablet addressed to Shaykh Salmán : “ *One of the signs of the maturity of the world is that no one will accept to bear the weight of kingship. Kingship will remain with none willing to bear alone its weight. That day will be the day whereon wisdom will be manifested among mankind. Only in order to proclaim the Cause of God and spread abroad His Faith will anyone be willing to bear this grievous weight. Well is it with him who, for love of God and His Cause, and for the sake of God and for the purpose of proclaiming His Faith, will expose himself unto this great danger, and will accept this toil and trouble.* ”

## Recognition of Kingship.

Let none, however, mistake or unwittingly misrepresent the purpose of Bahá'u'lláh. Severe as has been His condemnation pronounced against those sovereigns who persecuted Him, and however strict the censure expressed collectively against those who failed signally in their clear duty to investigate the truth of His Faith and to restrain the hand of the wrong-doer, His teachings embody no principle that can, in any way, be construed as a repudiation, or even a disparagement, however veiled, of the institution of kingship. The catastrophic fall, and the extinction of the dynasties and empires of those monarchs whose disastrous end He particularly prophesied, and the declining fortunes of the sovereigns of His Own generation, whom He generally reproved—both constituting a passing phase of the evolution of the Faith,—should, in no wise, be confounded with the future position of that institution. Indeed, if we delve into the writings of the Author of the Bahá'í Faith, we cannot fail to discover unnumbered passages in which, in terms that none can misrepresent, the principle of kingship is eulogized, the rank and conduct of just and fair-minded kings is extolled,

the rise of monarchs, ruling with justice and even professing His Faith, is envisaged, and the solemn duty to arise and insure the triumph of Bahá'í sovereigns is inculcated. To conclude from the above quoted words, addressed by Bahá'u'lláh to the monarchs of the earth, to infer from the recital of the woeful disasters that have overtaken so many of them, that His followers either advocate or anticipate the definite extinction of the institution of kingship, would indeed be tantamount to a distortion of His teaching.

I can do no better than quote some of Bahá'u'lláh's Own testimonies, leaving the reader to shape his own judgment as to the falsity of such a deduction. In His "Epistle to the Son of the Wolf" He indicates the true source of kingship : "Regard for the rank of sovereigns is divinely ordained, as is clearly attested by the words of the Prophets of God and His chosen ones. He Who is the Spirit (Jesus)—may peace be upon Him—was asked : 'O Spirit of God ! Is it lawful to give tribute to Caesar, or not ?' And He made reply : 'Yea, render to Caesar the things that are Caesar's, and to God the things that are God's.' He forbade it not. These two sayings are, in the estimation of men of insight, one and the same, for if that which belonged to Caesar had not come from God He would have forbidden it. And likewise in the sacred verse : 'Obey God and obey the Apostle, and those among you invested with authority.' By 'those invested with authority' is meant primarily and more specially the Imáms—the blessings of God rest upon them. They verily are the manifestations of the power of God and the sources of His authority, and the repositories of His knowledge, and the day-springs of His commandments. Secondarily these words refer unto the kings and rulers—those through the brightness of whose justice the horizons of the world are resplendent and luminous."

And again : "In the Epistle to the Romans Saint Paul hath written : 'Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God ; the powers that be are ordained of God. Whosoever, therefore, resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God.' And further : 'For he is the minister of God, a revenger to execute wrath upon him that doeth evil.'

*He saith that the appearance of the kings, and their majesty and power, are of God."*

And again: "*A just king enjoyeth nearer access unto God than anyone. Unto this testifieth He Who speaketh in His Most Great Prison.*"<sup>1</sup>

Likewise in the *Bishárát* (Glad-Tidings) Bahá'u'lláh asserts that "*the majesty of kingship is one of the signs of God.*" "*We do not wish,*" He adds, "*that the countries of the world should be deprived thereof.*"

In the *Kitáb-i-Aqdas* He sets forth His purpose, and eulogizes the king who will profess His Faith: "*By the righteousness of God! It is not Our wish to lay hands on your kingdoms. Our mission is to seize and possess the hearts of men. Upon them the eyes of Bahá are fastened. To this testifieth the Kingdom of Names*<sup>2</sup>, *could ye but comprehend it. Whoso followeth his Lord, will renounce the world and all that is therein; how much greater, then, must be the detachment of Him Who holdeth so august a station!*" "*How great the blessedness that awaiteth the king who will arise to aid My Cause in My Kingdom, who will detach himself from all else but Me! Such a king is numbered with the Companions of the Crimson Ark*<sup>3</sup>—*the Ark which God hath prepared for the people of Bahá. All must glorify his name, must reverence his station, and aid him to unlock the cities with the keys of My Name, the Omnipotent Protector of all that inhabit the visible and invisible kingdoms. Such a king is the very eye of mankind, the luminous ornament on the brow of creation, the fountain-head of blessings unto the whole world. Offer up, O people of Bahá, your substance, nay your very lives, for his assistance.*"

In the *Lawh-i-Sultán*<sup>4</sup>, Bahá'u'lláh further reveals the significance of kingship: "*A just king is the shadow of God on earth. All should seek shelter under the shadow of his justice, and rest in the shade of his favor. This is not a matter which is either specific or limited in its scope, that it might be restricted to one or another person, inasmuch as the shadow telleth of the One Who casteth it. God, glorified be His remembrance, hath called Himself the Lord of the worlds, for*

1. The prison of 'Akka.

2. Bahá'u'lláh.

3. Allegorically, the Baháí Faith, which will save its followers from the impending world calamity.

4. Title of Bahá'u'lláh's letter to Sultan Abdu'l Aziz.

*He hath nurtured and still nurtureth everyone. Glorified be, then, His grace that hath preceded all created things, and His mercy that hath surpassed the worlds.*

In one of His Tablets Bahá'u'lláh has also written : “*The one true God, exalted be His glory, hath bestowed the government of the earth upon the kings. To none is given the right to act in any manner that would run counter to the considered views of them who are in authority. That which He hath reserved for Himself are the cities of men's hearts ; and of these the loved ones of Him Who is the Sovereign Truth are, in this Day, as the keys.*”

In the following passage He expresses this wish : “*We cherish the hope that one of the kings of the earth will, for the sake of God, arise for the triumph of this wronged, this oppressed people. Such a king will be eternally extolled and glorified. God hath prescribed unto this people the duty of aiding whosoever will aid them, of serving his best interests, and of demonstrating to him their abiding loyalty.*”

In the Lawh-i-Ra's He actually and categorically prophesies the rise of such a king : “*Ere long will God raise up from among the kings one who will aid His loved ones. He, verily, encompasseth all things. He will instill in the hearts the love of His loved ones. This, indeed, is irrevocably decreed by One Who is the Almighty, the Beneficent.*” In the Ridvánví'l-'Adl,<sup>1</sup> wherein the virtue of justice is exalted, He makes a parallel prediction : “*Ere long will God make manifest on earth kings who will recline on the couches of justice, and will rule amongst men even as they rule their own selves. They, indeed, are among the choicest of My creatures in the entire creation.*”

In the Kitáb-i-Aqdas He visualizes in these words the elevation to the throne of His native city,<sup>2</sup> “*the Mother of the World*” and “*the Day-spring of Light*,” of a king who will be adorned with the twin ornaments of justice and of devotion to His Faith : “*Let nothing grieve thee, O Land of Tá,<sup>2</sup> for God hath chosen thee to be the source of the joy of all mankind. He shall, if it be His will, bless thy throne*

1. In this epistle, Bahá'u'lláh defines the functions of the future Universal House of Justice.

2. Tíhrán.

*with one who will rule with justice, who will gather together the flock of God which the wolves have scattered. Such a ruler will, with joy and gladness, turn his face towards and extend his favors unto, the people of Bahá.<sup>1</sup> He indeed is accounted in the sight of God as a jewel among men. Upon him rest forever the glory of God, and the glory of all that dwell in the kingdom of His Revelation."*

## The Crumbling of Religious Orthodoxy.

Dear friends ! The decline in the fortunes of the crowned wielders of temporal power has been paralleled by a no less startling deterioration in the influence exercised by the world's spiritual leaders. The colossal events that have heralded the dissolution of so many kingdoms and empires have almost synchronized with the crumbling of the seemingly inviolable strongholds of religious orthodoxy. That same process which, swiftly and tragically, sealed the doom of kings and emperors, and extinguished their dynasties, has operated in the case of the ecclesiastical leaders of both Christianity and Islám, damaging their prestige, and, in some cases, overthrowing their highest institutions. "*Power hath been seized*" indeed, from both "*kings and ecclesiastics*." The glory of the former has been eclipsed, the power of the latter irretrievably lost.

Those leaders who exercised guidance and control over the ecclesiastical hierarchies of their respective religions have, likewise, been appealed to, warned, and reproved by Bahá'u'lláh, in terms no less uncertain than those in which the sovereigns who presided over the destinies of their subjects have been addressed. They, too, and more particularly the heads of Muslim ecclesiastical orders, have, in conjunction with despots and potentates, launched their assaults and thundered their anathemas against the Founders of the Faith of God, its followers, its principles, and its institutions. Were not the divines

---

1. The Baha'is.

of Persia the first who hoisted the standard of revolt, who inflamed the ignorant and subservient masses against it, and who instigated the civil authorities, through their outcry, their threats, their lies, their calumnies, and denunciations, to decree the banishments, to enact the laws, to launch the punitive campaigns, and to carry out the executions and massacres that fill the pages of its history? So abominable and savage was the butchery committed in a single day, instigated by these divines, and so typical of the "callousness of the brute and the ingenuity of the fiend" that Renan, in his "*Les Apôtres*," characterized that day as "perhaps unparalleled in the history of the world."

It was these divines, who, by these very acts, sowed the seeds of the disintegration of their own institutions, institutions that were so potent, so famous, and appeared so invulnerable when the Faith was born. It was they who, by assuming so lightly and foolishly, such awful responsibilities, were primarily answerable for the release of those violent and disruptive influences that have unchained disasters as catastrophic as those which overwhelmed kings, dynasties, and empires, and which constitute the most noteworthy landmarks in the history of the first century of the Bahá'í era. (1844-1944 A.D.)

This process of deterioration, however startling in its initial manifestations, is still operating with undiminished force, and will, as the opposition to the Faith of God, from various sources and in distant fields, gathers momentum, be further accelerated and reveal still more remarkable evidences of its devastating power. I cannot, in view of the proportions which this book has already assumed, expatiate, as fully as I would wish, on the aspects of this weighty theme, which, together with the reaction of the sovereigns of the earth to the Message of Bahá'u'lláh, is one of the most fascinating and edifying episodes in the dramatic story of His Faith. I will only consider the repercussions of the violent assaults made by the ecclesiastical leaders of Islám and, to a lesser degree, by certain exponents of Christian orthodoxy upon their respective institutions. I will preface these observations with some

passages gleaned from the great mass of Bahá'u'lláh's Tablets which, both directly and indirectly, bear reference to Muslim and Christian divines, and which throw such a powerful light on the dismal disasters that have overtaken, and are still overtaking, the ecclesiastical hierarchies of the two religions with which the Faith has been immediately concerned.

It must not be inferred, however, that Bahá'u'lláh directed His historic addresses exclusively to the leaders of Islám and Christianity, or that the impact of an all-pervading Faith on the strongholds of religious orthodoxy is to be confined to the institutions of these two religious systems. “*The time fore-ordained unto the peoples and kindreds of the earth,*” affirms Bahá'u'lláh, “*is now come. The promises of God, as recorded in the Holy Scriptures, have all been fulfilled . . . This is the Day which the Pen of the Most High hath glorified in all the Holy Scriptures. There is no verse in them that doth not declare the glory of His holy name, and no Book that doth not testify unto the loftiness of this most exalted theme.*” “*Were We,*” He adds, “*to make mention of all that hath been revealed in these heavenly Books and Holy Scriptures concerning this Revelation, this Tablet would assume impossible dimensions.*” As the promise of the Faith of Bahá'u'lláh is enshrined in all the Scriptures of past religions, so does its Author address Himself to their followers, and particularly to their responsible leaders who have intervened between Him and their respective congregations. “*At one time,*” writes Bahá'u'lláh, “*We address the people<sup>1</sup> of the Torah and summon them unto Him Who is the Revealer of verses, Who hath come from Him Who layeth low the necks of men . . . At another, We address the people of the Evangel<sup>2</sup> and say: ‘The All-Glorious is come in this Name whereby the Breeze of God hath wafted over all regions.’ . . . At still another, We address the people of the Qur'an saying: ‘Fear the All-Merciful, and cavil not at Him through Whom all religions were founded.’ . . . Know thou, moreover, that We have addressed to the Magians<sup>3</sup>, Our Tablets and adorned them with Our Law. . . . We have revealed in them the essence of all the hints and allusions contained in their Books. The Lord, verily, is the Almighty, the All-Knowing.”*

---

1. The Jews.

2. The Christians.

3. The Zoroastrian priests.

Addressing the Jewish people Bahá'u'lláh has written : “*The Most Great Law is come, and the Ancient Beauty<sup>1</sup> ruleth upon the throne of David. Thus hath My Pen spoken that which the histories of bygone ages have related. At this time, however, David crieth aloud and saith : ‘O my loving Lord ! Do Thou number me with such as have stood steadfast in Thy Cause, O Thou through Whom the faces have been illumined, and the footsteps have slipped !’*” And again : “*The Breath hath been wafted, and the Breeze hath blown, and from Zion hath appeared that which was hidden, and from Jerusalem is heard the Voice of God, the One, the Incomparable, the Omniscient.*” Furthermore, in His “Epistle to the Son of the Wolf” Bahá'u'lláh has revealed : “*Lend an ear unto the song of David. He saith : ‘Who will bring me into the Strong City ?’ The Strong City is ‘Akká, which hath been named the Most Great Prison, and which possesseth a fortress and mighty ramparts. O Shaykh ! Peruse that which Isaiah hath spoken in His Book. He saith : ‘Get thee up into the high mountain, O Zion, that bringest good tidings ; lift up thy voice with strength, O Jerusalem, that bringest good tidings. Lift it up, be not afraid ; say unto the cities of Judah ; ‘Behold your God ! Behold the Lord God will come with strong hand, and His arm shall rule for Him.’ This Day all the signs have appeared. A great City<sup>2</sup> hath descended from heaven, and Zion trembleth and exulteth with joy at the Revelation of God, for it hath heard the Voice of God on every side.*”

To the priestly caste, holding sacerdotal supremacy over the followers of the Faith of Zoroaster, that same Voice, identifying itself with the voice of the promised Sháh-Bahrám,<sup>3</sup> has declared : “*O high priests ! Ears have been given you that they may hearken unto the mystery of Him Who is the Self-Dependent, and eyes that they may behold Him. Wherefore flee ye ? The Incomparable Friend is manifest. He speaketh that wherein lieth salvation. Were ye, O high priests, to discover the perfume of the rose-garden of understanding, ye would seek none other but Him, and would recognize, in His new vesture, the All-Wise and Peerless One, and would turn*

1. Baha'u'llah.

2. Revelation of St. John XXI, 10-11, etc.

3. The Prophet Zoroaster promised the coming of Shah-Bahram Varjavand.

*your eyes from the world and all who seek it, and would arise to help Him.” “Whatsoever hath been announced in the Books,”* Bahá’u’lláh, replying to a Zoroastrian who had inquired regarding the promised Sháh-Bahrám, has written, “*hath been revealed and made clear. From every direction the signs have been manifested. The Omnipotent One is calling, in this Day, and announcing the appearance of the Supreme Heaven.*” “*This is not the day,*” He, in another Tablet declares, “*whereon the high priests can command and exercise their authority. In your Book it is stated that the high priests will, on that Day, lead men far astray, and will prevent them from drawing nigh unto Him. He indeed is a high priest who hath seen the light and hastened unto the way leading to the Beloved.*” “*Say, O high priests!*” He, again addresses them, “*The Hand of Omnipotence is stretched forth from behind the clouds; behold ye it with new eyes. The tokens of His majesty and greatness are unveiled; gaze ye on them with pure eyes. . . . Say, O high priests! Ye are held in reverence because of My Name, and yet ye flee Me! Ye are the high priests of the Temple. Had ye been the high priests of the Omnipotent One, ye would have been united with Him, and would have recognized Him. . . . Say, O high priests! No man’s acts shall be acceptable, in this Day, unless he forsaketh mankind and all that men possess, and setteth his face towards the Omnipotent One.*”

It is not, however, with either of these two Faiths<sup>1</sup> that we are primarily concerned. It is to Islám and, to a lesser extent, to Christianity, that my theme is directly related. Islám, from which the Faith of Bahá’u’lláh has sprung, even as did Christianity from Judaism, is the religion within whose pale that Faith first rose and developed, from whose ranks the great mass of Bahá’í adherents have been recruited, and by whose leaders they have been, and indeed are still being, persecuted. Christianity, on the other hand, is the religion to which the vast majority of Bahá’ís of non-Islamic extraction belong, within whose spiritual domain the Administrative Order<sup>2</sup> of the Faith of God is rapidly advancing, and by whose ecclesiastical exponents that Order is being increasingly assailed. Unlike Hinduism, Buddhism, Judaism and even

1. Judaism and Zoroastrianism.

2. Refers to the Bahá’ís of America who are responsible for the consolidation and progress of Bahá’í Administration everywhere.

Zoroastrianism which, in the main, are still unaware of the potentialities of the Cause of God, and whose response to its Message is as yet negligible, the Muḥammadan and Christian Faiths may be regarded as the two religious systems which are sustaining, at this formative stage in its evolution, the full impact of so tremendous a Revelation.

Let us, then, consider what the Founders of the Bahá'í Faith have addressed to, or written about, the recognized leaders of Islám and Christianity. We have already considered the passages with reference to the kings of Islám, whether as Caliphs reigning in Constantinople, or as Sháhs of Persia who ruled the kingdom as temporary trustees for the expected Imám<sup>1</sup>. We have also noted the Tablet which Bahá'u'lláh specifically revealed for the Roman Pontiff,<sup>2</sup> and the more general message in the Súriy-i-Múlúk<sup>3</sup> directed to the kings of Christendom. No less challenging and ominous is the Voice that has warned and called to account the Muḥammadan divines and the Christian clergy.

*“Leaders of religion,”* is Bahá'u'lláh's clear and universal censure pronounced in the Kitáb-i-Iqán, *“in every age, have hindered their people from attaining the shores of eternal salvation, inasmuch as they held the reins of authority in their mighty grasp. Some for the lust of leadership, others through want of knowledge and understanding, have been the cause of the deprivation of the people. By their sanction and authority, every Prophet of God hath drunk from the chalice of sacrifice, and winged His flight unto the heights of glory. What unspeakable cruelties they that have occupied the seats of authority and learning have inflicted upon the true Monarchs of the world, those Gems of Divine virtue! Content with a transitory dominion, they have deprived themselves of an everlasting sovereignty.”* And again, in that same Book: *“Among these ‘veils of glory’ are the divines and doctors living in the days of the Manifestation of God, who, because of their want of discernment and their love and eagerness for leadership, have failed to submit to the Cause of God, nay, have even refused to incline their ears*

1. Imam Mihdi, Who is promised by Islam, and Bab claimed to be that Imam.

2. The Pope.

3. Bahá'u'lláh's epistle to kings.

unto the Divine Melody. ‘They have thrust their fingers into their ears.’ And the people also, utterly ignoring God and taking them for their masters, have placed themselves unreservedly under the authority of these pompous and hypocritical leaders, for they have no sight, no hearing, no heart, of their own to distinguish truth from falsehood. Notwithstanding the divinely-inspired admonitions of all the Prophets, the Saints, and Chosen Ones of God, enjoining the people to see with their own eyes and hear with their own ears, they have disdainfully rejected their counsels and have blindly followed, and will continue to follow, the leaders of their Faith. Should a poor and obscure person, destitute of the attire of the men of learning, address them saying: ‘Follow ye, O people, the Messengers of God,’ they would, greatly surprised at such a statement, reply: ‘What! Meanest thou that all these divines, all these exponents of learning, with all their authority, their pomp, and pageantry, have erred, and failed to distinguish truth from falsehood? Dost thou, and people like thyself, pretend to have comprehended that which they have not understood?’ If numbers and excellence of apparel be regarded as the criterions of learning and truth, the peoples of a bygone age, whom those of today have never surpassed in numbers, magnificence and power, should certainly be accounted a superior and worthier people.” Furthermore, “Not one Prophet of God was made manifest Who did not fall a victim to the relentless hate, to the denunciation, denial and execration of the clerics of His day! Woe unto them for the iniquities their hands have formerly wrought! Woe unto them for that which they are now doing! What veils of glory more grievous than these embodiments of error! By the righteousness of God! To pierce such veils is the mightiest of all acts, and to rend them asunder the most meritorious of all deeds!” “On their tongue,” He, moreover has written, “The mention of God hath become an empty name; in their midst His holy Word a dead letter. Such is the sway of their desires, that the lamp of conscience and reason hath been quenched in their hearts. . . . No two are found to agree on one and the same law, for they seek no God but their own desire, and tread no path but the path of error. In leadership they have recognized the ultimate object of their endeavor, and account pride and haughtiness as the highest attainments of their hearts’ desire. They have placed their sordid

machinations above the Divine decree, have renounced resignation unto the will of God, busied themselves with selfish calculation, and walked in the way of the hypocrite. With all their power and strength they strive to secure themselves in their petty pursuits, fearful lest the least discredit undermine their authority or blemish the display of their magnificence."

"The source and origin of tyranny," Bahá'u'lláh in another Tablet has affirmed, "have been the divines. Through the sentences pronounced by these haughty and wayward souls the rulers of the earth have wrought that which ye have heard. . . . The reins of the heedless masses have been, and are, in the hands of the exponents of idle fancies and vain imaginings. These decree what they please. God, verily, is clear of them, and We, too, are clear of them, as are such as have testified unto that which the Pen of the Most High hath spoken in this glorious Station."

"The leaders of men," He has likewise asserted, "have, from time immemorial, prevented the people from turning unto the Most Great Ocean.<sup>1</sup> The Friend of God (Abraham) was cast into fire through the sentence pronounced by the divines of the age, and lies and calumnies were imputed to Him Who discoursed with God (Moses). Reflect upon the One Who was the Spirit of God (Jesus). Though He showed forth the utmost compassion and tenderness, yet they rose up against that Essence of Being and Lord of the seen and unseen, in such a manner that He could find no refuge wherein to rest. Each day He wandered unto a new place, and sought a new shelter. Consider the Seal of the Prophets (Muhammad)—may the souls of all else except Him be His sacrifice!—How grievous the things which befell that Lord of all being at the hands of the priests of idolatry, and of the Jewish doctors, after He had uttered the blessed words proclaiming the unity of God! By My life! My pen groaneth, and all created things cry out by reason of the things that have touched Him, at the hands of such as have broken the Covenant of God and His Testament, and denied His Testimony, and gainsaid His signs."

"The foolish divines," another Tablet declares, "have laid aside the Book of God, and are occupied with that which they themselves have fashioned. The Ocean of Knowledge is re-

<sup>1</sup>. God.

vealed, and the shrill of the Pen of the Most High is raised, and yet they, even as earth-worms, are afflicted with the clay of their fancies and imaginings. They are exalted by reason of their relationship to the one true God, and yet they have turned aside from Him! Because of Him have they become famous, and yet they are shut off as by a veil from Him!"

"The pagan priests," in yet another Tablet is written, "and the Jewish and Christian divines, have committed the very things which the divines of the age, in this Dispensation, have committed, and are still committing. Nay, these have displayed a more grievous cruelty and a fiercer malice. Every atom beareth witness unto that which I say."

To these leaders who "esteem themselves the best of all creatures and have been regarded as the vilest by Him Who is the Truth," who "occupy the seats of knowledge and learning, and who have named ignorance knowledge, and called oppression justice," and who, "worship no God but their own desire, who bear allegiance to naught but gold, who are wrapt in the densest veils of learning, and who, enmeshed by its obscurities, are lost in the wilds of error,"—to these Bahá'u'lláh has chosen to address these words: "O concourse of divines! Ye shall not henceforth behold yourselves possessed of any power, inasmuch as We have seized it from you, and destined it for such as have believed in God, the One, the All-Powerful, the Almighty, the Unconstrained."

In the Kitáb-i-Aqdas we read the following: "Say: O leaders of religion! Weigh not the Book of God<sup>1</sup> with such standards and sciences as are current amongst you, for the Book itself is the unerring Balance<sup>2</sup> established amongst men. In this most perfect Balance whatsoever the peoples and kindreds of the earth possess must be weighed, while the measure of its weight should be tested according to its own standard, did ye but know it. The eye of My loving-kindness weepeth sore over you, inasmuch as ye have failed to recognize the One upon Whom<sup>3</sup> ye have been calling in the daytime and in the night season, at even and at morn. . . . O ye leaders of religion! Who is the man amongst you that can rival Me in vision or insight? Where is

1. Kitab-i-Aqdas, the Book revealed by Bahá'u'lláh.

2. Divine Justice.

3. Bahá'u'lláh, Who has been the One Promised by all the Prophets.

be to be found that dareth to claim to be My equal in utterance or wisdom? No, by My Lord, the All-Merciful! All on the earth shall pass away; and this is the face of your Lord, the Almighty, the Well-Beloved. . . . Say: This, verily, is the heaven in which the Mother Book<sup>1</sup> is treasured, could ye but comprehend it. He it is Who hath caused the Rock to shout, and the Burning Bush to lift up its voice, upon the Mount rising above the Holy Land, and proclaim: 'The Kingdom is God's, the sovereign Lord of all, the All-Powerful, the Loving!' We have not entered any school, nor read any of your dissertations. Incline your ears to the words of this unlettered One, wherewith He summoneth you unto God, the Ever-Abiding. Better is this for you than all the treasures of the earth, could ye but comprehend it."

"O concourse of divines!" He moreover has written, "When My verses were sent down, and My clear tokens were revealed, We found you behind the veils. This, verily, is a strange thing. . . . We have rent the veils asunder. Beware lest ye shut out the people by yet another veil. Pluck asunder the chains of vain imaginings, in the name of the Lord of all men, and be not of the deceitful. Should ye turn unto God, and embrace His Cause, spread not disorder within it, and measure not the Book of God with your selfish desires. This, verily, is the counsel of God aforetime and hereafter. . . . Had ye believed in God, when He revealed Himself, the people would not have turned aside from Him, nor would the things ye witness today have befallen Us. Fear God, and be not of the heedless. . . . This is the Cause that hath caused all your superstitions and idols to tremble. . . . O concourse of divines! Beware lest ye be the cause of strife in the land, even as ye were the cause of the repudiation of the Faith in its early days. Gather the people around this Word that hath made the pebbles to cry out: 'The kingdom is God's, the Dawning-Place of all signs!' . . . Tear the veils asunder in such wise that the inmates of the Kingdom will hear them being rent. This is the command of God, in days gone by, and for those to come. Blessed the man that observeth that whereto he was bidden, and woe betide the negligent."

---

1. Kitab-i-Aqdas, the Most Holy Book, revealed by Baha'u'llah.

And again: “How long will ye, O concourse of divines, level the spears of hatred at the face of Bahá? Rein in your pens. Lo, the Most Sublime Pen speaketh betwixt earth and heaven. Fear God, and follow not your desires which have altered the face of creation. Purify your ears that they may hearken unto the Voice of God. By God! It is even as fire that consumeth the veils, and as water that washeth the souls of all who are in the universe.”

“Say: O concourse of divines!” He furthermore addresses them, “Can any one of you race with the Divine Youth in the arena of wisdom and utterance, or soar with Him into the heaven of inner meaning and explanation? Nay, by My Lord, the God of mercy! All have swooned away in this Day from the Word of thy Lord. They are even as dead and lifeless, except him whom thy Lord, the Almighty, the Unconstrained, hath willed to exempt. Such a one is indeed of those endued with knowledge in the sight of Him Who is the All-Knowing. The inmates of Paradise, and the dwellers of the sacred Folds, bless him at even-tide and at dawn. Can the one possessed of wooden legs resist him whose feet God hath made of steel? Nay, by Him Who illumineth the whole of creation!”

“When We observed carefully,” He significantly remarks, “We discovered that Our enemies are, for the most part, the divines.” “Among the people are those who said: ‘He hath repudiated the divines. Say: ‘Yea, by My Lord! I, in very truth, was the One Who abolished the idols!’’” “We, verily, have sounded the Trumpet, which is Our Most Sublime Pen, and lo, the divines and the learned, and the doctors and the rulers, swooned away except such as God preserved, as a token of His grace, and He, verily, is the All-Bounteous, the Ancient of Days.”

“O concourse of divines! Fling away idle fancies and imaginings, and turn, then, towards the Horizon of Certitude.<sup>1</sup> I swear by God! All that ye possess will profit you not, neither all the treasures of the earth, nor the leadership ye have usurped. Fear God, and be not of the lost ones.” “Say: O concourse of divines! Lay aside all your veils and coverings. Give ear unto that whereunto calleth you the Most Sublime Pen, in this wondrous Day... The world is laden with dust, by reason of your vain

i. Iman or Faith.

*imaginings, and the hearts of such as enjoy near access to God are troubled because of your cruelty. Fear God, and be of them that judge equitably."*

*"O ye the dawning-places of knowledge!"* He thus exhorts them, *"Beware that ye suffer not yourselves to become changed, for as ye change, most men will, likewise, change. This, verily, is an injustice unto yourselves and unto others . . . Ye are even as a spring. If it be changed, so will the streams that branch out from it be changed. Fear God, and be numbered with the godly. In like manner, if the heart of man be corrupted, his limbs will also be corrupted. And similarly, if the root of a tree be corrupted, its branches, and its offshoots, and its leaves, and its fruits, will be corrupted."*

*"Say : O concourse of divines!"* He thus appeals to them, *"Be fair, I adjure you by God, and nullify not the Truth with the things ye possess. Peruse that which We have sent down with truth. It will, verily, aid you, and will draw you nigh unto God, the Mighty, the Great. Consider and call to mind how when Muhammad, the Apostle of God, appeared, the people denied Him. They ascribed unto Him what caused the Spirit (Jesus) to lament in His Most Sublime Station, and the Faithful Spirit to cry out. Consider, moreover, the things which befell the Apostles and Messengers of God before Him, by reason of what the hands of the unjust have wrought. We make mention of you for the sake of God, and remind you of His signs, and announce unto you the things ordained for such as are nigh unto Him in the most sublime Paradise and the all-highest Heaven, and I, verily, am the Announcer, the Omniscient. He hath come for your salvation, and hath borne tribulations that ye may ascend, by the ladder of utterance, unto the summit of understanding. . . . Peruse, with fairness and justice, that which hath been sent down. It will, verily, exalt you through the truth, and will cause you to behold the things from which ye have been withheld, and will enable you to quaff His sparkling Wine."*

## Words Addressed to Muslim Ecclesiastics

Let us now consider more particularly the specific references, and the words directly addressed, to Muslim

ecclesiastics by the Báb and by Bahá'u'lláh. The Báb, as attested by the Kitáb-i-Iqán, has “*specifically revealed an Epistle unto the divines of every city, wherein He hath fully set forth the character of the denial and repudiation of each of them.*” Whilst in Isfáhán, that time-honored stronghold of Muslim ecclesiasticism, He, through the medium of its governor, Manúchíhr Khán, invited in writing the divines of that city to engage in a contest with Him, in order, as He expressed it, to “*establish the truth and dissipate falsehood.*” Not one of the multitude of divines who thronged that great seat of learning had the courage to take up that challenge. Bahá'u'lláh, on His part, while in Adrianople, and as witnessed by His own Tablet to the Sháh of Persia signified His wish to be “*brought face to face with the divines of the age, and produce proofs and testimonies in the presence of His Majesty, the Sháh.*” This offer was denounced as a “*great presumption and amazing audacity*” by the divines of Tíhrán, who, in their fear, advised their sovereign to instantly punish the bearer of that Tablet. Previously, while Bahá'u'lláh was in Baghhdád, He expressed His willingness that, provided the divines of Najaf and Karbilá—the twin holiest cities next to Mecca and Medina, in the eyes of the shí'íhs—assembled and agreed regarding any miracle whichever they wished to be performed, and signed and sealed a statement affirming that on performance of this miracle they would acknowledge the truth of His Mission, He would unhesitatingly produce it. To this challenge they, as recorded by 'Abdu'l-Bahá in His “*Some Answered Questions*,” could offer no better reply than this : “*This man is an enchanter; perhaps he will perform an enchantment, and then we shall have nothing more to say.*” “*For twelve years,*” Bahá'u'lláh Himself has testified, “*We tarried in Baghhdád. Much as We desired that a large gathering of divines and fair-minded men be convened, so that truth might be distinguished from falsehood, and be fully demonstrated, no action was taken.*” And again : “*And likewise, while in 'Iráq, we wished to come together with the divines of Persia. No sooner did they hear of this, than they fled and said : 'He indeed is a manifest sorcerer!'* This is the word that proceeded aforetime out of the mouths of such as were like

them. These (divines) objected to what they said, and yet, they themselves repeat, in this day, what was said before them, and understand not. By My life! They are even as ashes in the sight of thy Lord. If He be willing, tempestuous gales will blow over them, and make them as dust. Thy Lord, verily, doth what He pleaseth."

These cruel and cowardly divines, who, as Bahá'u'lláh declared, had they not intervened, Persia would have been subdued<sup>1</sup> by the power of God in hardly more than two years, have been thus addressed in the Qayyúmu'l-Asmá: "O concourse of divines! Fear God from this day onwards in the views ye advance, for He Who is Our Remembrance in your midst, and Who cometh from Us, is, in very truth, the Judge and Witness. Turn away from that which ye lay hold of, and which the Book of God, the True One, hath not sanctioned, for on the Day of Resurrection ye shall, upon the Bridge, be, in very truth, held answerable for the position ye occupied."

In that same Book the Báb thus addresses the shí'íhs, as well as the entire body of the followers of the Prophet: "O concourse of shí'íhs! Fear ye God, and Our Cause, which concerneth Him Who is the Most Great Remembrance of God. For great is its fire, as decreed in the Mother-Book." "O people of the Qur'án! Ye are as nothing unless ye submit unto the Remembrance of God and unto this Book. If ye follow the Cause of God, We will forgive you your sins, and if ye turn aside from Our command, We will, in truth, condemn your souls in Our Book, unto the Most Great Fire. We, verily, do not deal unjustly with men, even to the extent of a speck on a date-stone."

And finally, in that same Commentary, this startling prophecy is recorded: "Ere long We will, in very truth, torment such as waged war against Husayn (Imám Husayn), in the Land of the Euphrates, with the most afflictive torment, and the most dire and exemplary punishment." "Ere long," He also, referring to that same people, in that same Book, has written, "will God wreak His vengeance upon them, at the time of Our Return, and He hath, in very truth, prepared for them, in the world to come, a severe torment."

As to Bahá'u'lláh, the passages I cite in these pages constitute but a fraction of the references to the Muslim

i. Persia would have accepted the Baháí Faith, if the Muslim clericals had not interfered.

divines with which His writings abound. “*The Lote-Tree beyond Which there is no passing,*” He exclaims, “*crieth out, by reason of the cruelty of the divines. It shouteth aloud, and bewaileth itself.*” “*From the inception of this sect (shí‘ih),*” He, in His “Epistle to the Son of the Wolf,” has written, “*until the present day, how great hath been the number of the divines that have appeared, none of whom became cognizant of the nature of this Revelation. What could have been the cause of this waywardness? Were We to mention it, their limbs would cleave asunder.* It is necessary for them to meditate, nay to meditate for a thousand thousand years, that haply they may attain unto a sprinkling from the ocean of knowledge, and discover the things whereof they are oblivious in this day. I was walking in the Land of Tá (Tihrán)—the day-spring of the signs of thy Lord—when lo, I heard the lamentation of the pulpits and the voice of their supplication unto God, blessed and glorified be He! They cried out and said: ‘O God of the world and Lord of the nations! Thou beholdest our state and the things which have befallen us, by reason of the cruelty of Thy servants. Thou hast created us and revealed us for Thy glorification and praise. Thou dost now hear what the wayward proclaim upon us in Thy days. By Thy might! Our souls are melted, and our limbs are trembling. Alas, alas! Would that we had never been created and revealed by Thee!’ The hearts of them that enjoy near access to God are consumed by these words, and from them the cries of such as are devoted to Him are raised.”

“*These thick clouds,*” He, in that same Epistle has stated, “*are the exponents of idle fancies and vain imaginings, who are none other than the divines of Persia.*” “*By ‘divines’ in the passage cited above,*” He, in that same connection explains, “*is meant those men who outwardly attire themselves with the raiment of knowledge, but who inwardly are deprived therefrom.* In this connection We quote, from the Tablet addressed to His Majesty the Sháh, certain passages from the ‘Hidden Words’ which were revealed by the Abhá Pen under the name of the ‘Book of Fátimih,’ the blessings of God be upon her! ‘O ye that are foolish, yet have a name to be wise! Wherefore do ye wear the guise of the shepherd, when inwardly ye have become wolves, intent upon My flock? Ye are even as the star, which rises ere the dawn, and which, though it seem radian and

*luminous, leadeth the wayfarers of My city astray into the paths of perdition.' And likewise He saith : ' O ye seemingly fair yet inwardly foul ! Ye are like clear but bitter water, which to outward seeming is but crystal pure but of which, when tested by the Divine Assayer, not a drop is accepted. Yea, the sun-beam falleth alike upon the dust and the mirror, yet differ they in reflection even as doth the star from the earth : nay, immeasurable is the difference ! '*

"We have invited all men," Bahá'u'lláh, in another Tablet has stated, "to turn towards God, and have acquainted them with the Straight Path. They (divines) rose up against Us with such cruelty as hath sapped the strength of Islám, and yet most of the people are heedless!" "The children of Him Who is the Friend of God (Abraham)," He moreover has written, "and heirs of the One Who discoursed with God (Moses), who were accounted the most abject of men, have split the veils asunder, and rent the coverings, and seized the Sealed Wine from the hands of the bounty of Him Who is the Self-Subsisting, and drunk their fill, whilst the divines have remained, until the present time, hesitant and perverse." And again : "The divines of Persia committed that which no people amongst the peoples of the world have committed."

"If this Cause be of God," He thus addresses the Minister of the Sháh in Constantinople, "no man can prevail against it ; and if it be not of God, the divines amongst you, and they that follow their corrupt desires, and such as have rebelled against Him, will surely suffice to overpower it."

"Of all the peoples of the world," He, in another Tablet observes, "they that have suffered the greatest loss have been, and are still, the people of Persia. I swear by the Day-Star of Utterance which shineth upon the world in its meridian glory ! The lamentations of the pulpits, in that country, are being raised continually. In the early days such lamentations were heard in the Land of Tá (Tíhrán), for pulpits, erected for the purpose of remembering the True One—exalted be His glory—have now, in Persia, become places wherfrom blasphemies are uttered against Him Who is the Desire of the worlds."

"In this day," is His caustic denunciation, "the world is redolent with the fragrances of the robe of the Revelation of the Ancient King . . . and yet, they (divines) have gathered

together, and established themselves upon their seats, and have spoken that which would put an animal to shame, how much more man himself! Were they to become aware of one of their acts, and perceive the mischief it hath wrought, they would, with their own hands, dispatch themselves to their final abode."

"O concourse of divines!" Bahá'u'lláh thus commands them, ". . . Lay aside that which ye possess, and hold your peace, and give ear, then, unto that which the Tongue of Grandeur and Majesty speaketh. How many the veiled handmaidens who turned unto Me, and believed, and how numerous the wearers of the turban who were debarred from Me, and followed in the footsteps of bygone generations!"

"I swear by the Day-Star that shineth above the Horizon of Utterance!" He asserts, "A paring from the nail of one of the believing handmaidens is, in this day, more esteemed, in the sight of God, than the divines of Persia, who, after thirteen hundred years' waiting, have perpetrated what the Jews have not perpetrated during the Revelation of Him Who is the Spirit (Jesus)." "Though they rejoice," is His warning, "at the adversities that have touched Us, the day will come whereon they shall wail and weep."

"O heedless one!" He thus addresses, in the Lawh-i-Burhán,<sup>1</sup> a notorious Persian mujtahid, whose hands were stained with the blood of Bahá'í martyrs, "Rely not on thy glory and thy power. Thou art even as the last trace of sunlight upon the mountain-top. Soon will it fade away, as decreed by God, the All-Possessing, the Most High. Thy glory, and the glory of such as are like thee, have been taken away, and this, verily, is what hath been ordained by the One with Whom is the Mother Tablet . . . Because of you the Apostle (Muhammad) lamented, and the Chaste One (Fátimih)<sup>2</sup> cried out, and the countries were laid waste, and darkness fell upon all regions. O concourse of divines! Because of you the people were abased, and the banner of Islám was hauled down, and its mighty throne subverted. Every time a man of discernment hath sought to hold fast unto that which would exalt Islám, you raised a clamor, and thereby was He deterred from achieving His purpose, while the land remained fallen in clear ruin."

1. The writing of Bahá'u'lláh proving the truth of His claim, as a World Redeemer.

2. The Prophet Muhammad's daughter and wife of Imam Ali.

“Say: O concourse of Persian divines!” Bahá’u’lláh again prophesies, “In My name ye have seized the reins of men, and occupy the seats of honor, by reason of your relation to Me. When I revealed Myself, however, ye turned aside, and committed what hath caused the tears of such as have recognized Me to flow. Ere long will all that ye possess perish, and your glory be turned into the most wretched abasement, and ye shall behold the punishment for what ye have wrought, as decreed by God, the Ordainer, the All-Wise.”

In the Súriy-i-Múluk, addressing the entire company of the ecclesiastical leaders of Islám in Constantinople, the capital of the Empire and seat of the Caliphate, He has written: “O ye divines of the City! We came to you with the truth, whilst ye were heedless of it. Methinks ye are as dead, wrapt in the coverings of your own selves. Ye sought not Our presence, when so to do would have been better for you than all your doings. . . . Know ye, that had your leaders, to whom ye owe allegiance, and on whom ye pride yourselves, and whom ye mention by day and by night, and from whose traces ye seek guidance—had they lived in these days, they would have circled around Me, and would not have separated themselves from Me, whether at even-tide or at morn. Ye, however, did not turn your faces towards My face, for even less than a moment, and waxed proud, and were careless of this Wronged One, Who hath been so afflicted by men that they dealt with Him as they pleased. Ye failed to inquire about My condition, nor did ye inform yourselves of the things which befell Me. Thereby have ye withheld from yourselves the winds of holiness, and the breezes of bounty, that blow from this luminous and perspicuous Spot. Methinks ye have clung to outward things, and forgotten the inner things, and say that which ye do not. Ye are lovers of names, and appear to have given yourselves up to them. For this reason make ye mention of the names of your leaders. And should any one like them, or superior unto them, come unto you, ye would flee him. Through their names ye have exalted yourselves, and have secured your positions, and live and prosper. And were your leaders to reappear, ye would not renounce your leadership, nor would ye turn in their direction, nor set your faces towards them. We found you, as We found most men, worshipping names which they mention during the days of their life, and with which they

occupy themselves. No sooner do the Bearers of these names appear, however, than they repudiate them, and turn upon their heels . . . Know ye that God will not, in this day, accept your thoughts, nor your remembrance of Him, nor your turning towards Him, nor your devotions, nor your vigilance, unless ye be made new in the estimation of this Servant, could ye but perceive it."

The voice of 'Abdu'l-Bahá, the Center of the Covenant of God, has, likewise, been raised, announcing the dire misfortunes which were to overtake, soon after His passing, the ecclesiastical hierarchies of Islám. "This glory," He has written, "shall be turned into the most abject abasement, and this pomp and might converted into the most complete subjugation. Their palaces will be transformed into prisons and the course of their ascendant star terminate in the depths of the pit. Laughter and merriment will vanish, nay more, the voice of their weeping will be raised." "Even as the snow," He moreover has written, "they will melt away in the July sun."

The dissolution of the institution of the Caliphate, the complete secularization of the state which had enshrined the most august institution of Islám, and the virtual collapse of the shi'ih hierarchy in Persia, were the visible and immediate consequences of the treatment meted out to the Cause of God by the clergy of the two largest communions of the Muslim world.

## The Falling Fortunes of Shi'ih Islám

Let us first consider the visitations that have marked the falling fortunes of shi'ih Islám. The iniquities summarized in the beginning of these pages, and for which the shi'ih ecclesiastical order in Persia is to be held primarily answerable; iniquities which in the words of Bahá'u'lláh, had caused "the Apostle (Muhammad) to lament, and the Chaste One (Fátimih) to cry out," and "all created things to groan, and the limbs of the holy ones to quake"; iniquities which had riddled the breast of the Báb with bullets, and bowed down Bahá'u'lláh, and turned His hair white, and caused Him to groan aloud in anguish, and made

Muhammad to weep over Him, and Jesus to beat Himself upon the head, and the Báb to bewail His plight—such iniquities indeed could not, and were not to, remain unpunished. God, the Fiercest of Avengers, was lying in wait, pledged “*not to forgive any man’s injustice.*” The scourge of His chastisement, swift, sudden and terrible, was, at long last, let loose upon the perpetrators of these iniquities.

A revolution, formidable in its proportions, far-reaching in its repercussions, amazing in the absence of bloodshed and even of violence which marked its progress, challenged that ecclesiastical ascendancy which, for centuries, had been of the essence of Islám in that country, and virtually overthrew a hierarchy<sup>1</sup> with which the machinery of the state and the life of the people had been inextricably interwoven. Such a revolution did not signalize the disestablishment of a state-church. It indeed was tantamount to the disruption of what may be called a church-state—a state that had been hopefully awaiting, even up till the moment of its expiry, the gladsome advent of the Hidden Imám, who would not only seize the reins of authority from the Sháh, the chief magistrate who was merely representing him, but would also assume dominion over the whole earth.

The spirit which that clerical order had so assiduously striven, during a whole century, to crush ; the Faith which it had, with such ferocious brutality, attempted to extirpate ; were now, in their turn, through the forces they had engendered in the world, deranging the equilibrium, and sapping the strength, of that same order whose ramifications had extended to every sphere, duty, and act of life in that country. The rock-wall of Islám, seemingly impregnable, was now shaken to its foundations, and was tottering to its ruin, before the very eyes of the persecuted followers of the Faith of Bahá’u’lláh. A sacerdotal hierarchy that had held in thrall for so long the Faith of God, and seemed, at one time, to have mortally struck it down, now found itself the prey of a superior civil authority whose settled policy was to fasten, steadily and relentlessly, its coils around it.

---

1. The dissolution of Turkey.

The vast system of that hierarchy, with all its elements and appurtenances—its *shaykhul-Ísláms* (high-priests), its *mujtahids* (doctors of the law), its *mullás* (priests), its *fuqahás* (jurists), its *imáms* (prayer-leaders), its *mu'azzins* (criers), its *vu'ázz* (preachers), its *qádis* (judges), its *mutavallís* (custodians), its *madrisihs* (seminaries), its *mudarri-síns* (professors), its *tullábs* (pupils), its *qurrás* (intoners), its *mu'abbirins* (sooth-sayers), its *muhaddithíns* (narrators), its *musakhkhirins* (spirit-subduers), its *dhákirins* (remembrers), its *'ummál-i-dhakát* (almsgivers), its *muqaddasíns* (saints), its *munzavís* (recluses), its *súfís*, its dervishes, and what not—was paralyzed and utterly discredited. Its *mujtahids*, those firebrands, who wielded powers of life and death, and who for generations had been accorded honors almost regal in character, were reduced to a deplorably insignificant number. The beturbaned prelates of the Islamic church who, in the words of Bahá'u'lláh, "*decked their heads with green and white, and committed what made the Faithful Spirit to groan,*" were ruthlessly swept away, except for a handful who, in order to safeguard themselves against the fury of an impious populace, are now compelled to submit to the humiliation of producing, whenever the occasion demands it, the license granted them by the civil authorities to wear this vanishing emblem of a vanished authority. The rest of this turbaned class, whether *siyyids*, *mullás*, or *hájis*, were forced not only to exchange their venerable headdress for the *kuláh-i-farangí* (European hat), which not long ago they themselves had anathematized, but also to discard their flowing robes and don the tight-fitting garments of European style, the introduction of which into their country they had, a generation ago, so violently disapproved.

"*The dark blue and white domes,*"—an allusion by 'Abdu'l-Bahá to the rotund and massive head-gears of the priests of Persia—had indeed been "*inverted.*" Those whose heads had borne them, the arrogant, fanatical, perfidious, and retrograde clericals, "*in the grasp of whose authority,*" as testified by Bahá'u'lláh, "*were held the reins of the people,*" whose "*words are the pride of the world,*" and whose "*deeds are the shame of the nations,*" recognizing the

wretchedness of their state, betook themselves, crestfallen and destitute of hope, to their homes, there to drag out a miserable existence. Impotent and sullen, they are watching the operations of a process which, having reversed their policy and ruined their handiwork, is irresistibly moving towards a climax.

The pomp and pageantry of these princes of the church of Islám have already died out. Their fanatical outcries, their clamorous invocations, their noisy demonstrations, are stilled. Their *fatvás* (sentences), pronounced with such shamelessness, and at times embracing the denunciation of kings, are a dead letter. The spectacular sight of congregational prayers, in which thousands of worshippers, lined row upon row, participated, has vanished. The pulpits from whence they discharged the thunder of their anathemas against the powerful and the innocent alike, are deserted and silent. Their *waqfs*, those priceless and far-flung endowments—the landed property of the expected *Imám*—which in Isfáhán alone at one time embraced the whole of the city, have been wrested out of their hands, and brought under the control of a lay administration. Their *madrisihs* (seminaries), with their medieval learning, are deserted and dilapidated. The innumerable tomes of theological commentaries, super-commentaries, glosses, and notes, unreadable, unprofitable, the product of misdirected ingenuity and toil, and pronounced by one of the most enlightened Islamic thinkers in modern times as works obscuring sound knowledge, breeding maggots, and fit for fire, are now buried away overspread with cobwebs, and forgotten. Their abstruse dissertations, their vehement controversies, their interminable discussions, are outmoded and abandoned. Their *masjids* (mosques), and *imám-zádihs* (tombs of saints), which were privileged to extend the *bast* (right of sanctuary) to many a criminal, and which had degenerated into a monstrous scandal, whose walls rang with the intonations of a hypocritical and profligate clergy, whose ornaments vied with the treasures of the palaces of kings, are either forsaken or fallen in ruin. Their *takyihs*, the haunts of the lazy, the passive, and contemplative pietists, are either

being sold or closed down. Their *ta'zíyih* (religious plays), acted with barbaric zeal, and accentuated by sudden spasms of unbridled religious excitement, are forbidden. Even their *rawdih-khánís* (lamentations), with their long-drawn out, plaintive howls, which arose from so many houses, have been curtailed and discouraged. The sacred pilgrimages to *Najaf* and *Karbilá*, the holiest shrines of the *shí'ih* world, are reduced in number and made increasingly difficult, preventing thereby many a greedy *mullá* from indulging in his time-honored habit of charging double for making those pilgrimages as a substitute for the religious-minded. The disuse of the veil which the *mullás* fought tooth and nail to prevent; the equality of sexes which their law forbade; the erection of civil tribunals which superseded their ecclesiastical courts; the abolition of the *síghih* (concubinage) which, when contracted for short periods, is hardly distinguishable from quasi-prostitution, and which made of the turbulent and fanatical *Mashhad*, the national center of pilgrimage, one of the most immoral cities in Asia; and finally, the efforts which are being made to disparage the Arabic tongue, the sacred language of *Islám* and of the *Qur'án*, and to divorce it from Persian—all these have successively lent their share to the acceleration of that impelling process which has subordinated to the civil authority the position and interests of muslim clericals to a degree undreamt-of by any *mullá*.

Well might the once lofty turbaned, long-bearded, grave-looking *áqá* (*mullá*), who had so insolently concerned himself with every department of human activity, as he sits, hatless, clean-shaven, in the seclusion of his home, and perhaps listening to the strains of western music, blared upon the ethers of his native land, pause to reflect for a while on the vanished splendors of his defunct empire. Well might he muse upon the havoc which the rising tide of nationalism and skepticism has wrought in the adamantine traditions of his country. Well might he recollect the halcyon days when, seated on a donkey, and parading through the *bázárs* and *maydáns* of his native town, an eager but deluded multitude would rush to kiss with fervor not only his hands, but also the tail of the animal on which

he rode. Well might he remember the blind zeal with which they acclaimed his acts, and the prodigies and miracles they ascribed to their performance.

He might indeed look back further, and call to mind the reign of those pious *Safaví* monarchs, who delighted to call themselves “dogs on the threshold of the Immaculate *Imáms*,” how one of those kings was induced to go on foot before the *mujtahid* as he rode through the *maydán-i-sháh*, the main square of *Isfáhán*, as a mark of royal subservience to the favorite minister of the Hidden *Imám*, a minister who, as distinct from the *sháh*’s title, styled himself “the servant of the Lord of Saintship (*Imám ‘Alí*).”

Was it not, he might well ponder, this same *Sháh ‘Abbás* the Great who had been arrogantly addressed by another *mujtahid* as “the founder of a borrowed empire,” implying that the kingdom of the “king of kings” really belonged to the expected *Imám*, and was held by the *sháh* solely in the capacity of a temporary trustee? Was it not this same *sháh* who walked the entire distance of eight hundred miles from *Isfáhán* to *Mashhad*, the “special glory of the *shí‘ih* world,” to offer his prayers, in the only way that befitted the *sháhansháh*, at the shrine of the *Imám Ridá*, and who trimmed the thousand candles which adorned its courts? Had not *Sháh Tahmasp*, on receiving an epistle, penned by yet another *mujtahid*, sprung to his feet, placed it on his eyes, kissed it with rapture, and, because he had been addressed as “brother,” ordered it to be placed within his winding-sheet and buried with him?

Might not that same *mullá* ponder the torrents of blood which, during the long years when he enjoyed impunity of conduct, flowed at his behest, the flamboyant anathemas he pronounced, and the great army of orphans and widows, of the disinherited, the dishonored, the destitute, and the homeless which, on the Day of Reckoning, were, with one accord, to cry out for vengeance, and invoke the malediction of God upon him?

That infamous crew had indeed merited the degradation in which it had sunk. Persistently ignoring the sentence of doom which the finger of *Bahá’u’lláh* had traced upon the wall, it pursued, for well-nigh a hundred

years, its fatal course, until, at the appointed hour, its death-knell was sounded by those spiritual, revolutionary forces which, synchronizing with the first dawnings of the World Order of His Faith, are upsetting the equilibrium, and throwing into such confusion, the ancient institutions of mankind.

## The Collapse of the Caliphate.

These same forces, operating in a collateral field, have effected a still more remarkable, and a more radical revolution, culminating in the collapse and fall of the Muslim Caliphate, the most powerful institution of the whole Islamic world. This event of portentous significance has, moreover, been followed by a formal and definite separation of what was left of the sunni faith in Turkey from the state, and by the complete secularization of the Republic that has arisen on the ruins of the Ottoman theocratic empire. This catastrophic fall, that stunned the Islamic world, and the avowed, the unqualified, and formal divorce between the spiritual and temporal powers, which distinguished the revolution in Turkey from that which occurred in Persia, I now proceed to consider.

Sunní Islám has sustained, not through the action of a foreign and invading power, but at the hands of a dictator, avowedly professing the Faith of Muhammad, a blow more grievous than that which fell, almost simultaneously, upon its sister-sect in Persia. This retributive act, directed against the arch-enemy of the Faith of Bahá'u'lláh, recalls a similar disaster precipitated through the action of a Roman emperor, during the latter part of the first century of the Christian era—a disaster that razed to its foundations the Temple of Solomon, destroyed the Holy of Holies, laid waste the city of David, uprooted the Jewish Hierarchy in Jerusalem, massacred thousands of the Jewish people—the persecutors of the religion of Jesus Christ—dispersed the remainder over the surface of the earth, and reared a pagan colony on Zion.

The Caliph, the self-styled vicar of the Prophet of Islám, exercised a spiritual sovereignty, and was invested with a sacred character, which the Sháh of Persia neither claimed nor possessed. Nor should it be forgotten that the sphere of his spiritual jurisdiction extended to countries far beyond the confines of his own empire, and embraced the overwhelming majority of muslims throughout the world. He was, moreover, in his capacity as the Prophet's representative on earth, regarded as the protector of the holy cities of Mecca and Medina, the defender and propagator of Islám, and the commander of its followers in any holy war they might be called upon to wage.

So potent, so august, so sacred a personage was at first by virtue of the abolition of the sultanate in Turkey, divested of that temporal authority which the exponents of the sunní school have regarded as a necessary concomitant to his high office. The sword, emblem of temporal sovereignty, was thus wrested out of the hands of the commander who, for a brief period, was permitted to occupy such an anomalous and precarious position. It was soon, however, trumpeted to the sunní world, which had not previously been in the least consulted, that the caliphate itself had been extinguished, and that the country which had accepted it as an appendage to its sultanate for more than four hundred years, had now permanently disowned it. The Turks, who had been the militant leaders of the Muhammadan world, since the Arab decline, and who had carried the standard of Islám as far as the gates of Vienna, the seat of government of Europe's premier Power, had resigned their leadership. The ex-caliph, shorn of his royal pomp, stripped of the symbols of his vicarship, and deserted by friend and foe alike, was forced to flee from Constantinople, the proud seat of a dual sovereignty, to the land of the infidels, resigning himself to that same life of exile to which a number of his fellow-sovereigns had been and were still condemned.

Nor has the sunní world, despite determined efforts, succeeded in designating any one in his stead who, though deprived of the sword of a commander, would still act as

the custodian of the cloak and standard of the Apostle <sup>1</sup> of God—the twin holy symbols of the Caliphate. Conferences were held, discussions ensued, a Congress of the Caliphate was convened in the Egyptian capital, the City of the Fátimites, only to result in the widely-advertised and public confession of its failure: “They have agreed to disagree!”

Strange, incredibly strange, must appear the position of this most powerful branch of the Islamic Faith, with no outward and visible head to voice its sentiments and convictions, its unity irretrievably shattered, its radiance obscured, its law undermined, its institutions thrown into hopeless confusion. This institution that had challenged the inalienable, divinely-appointed rights of the Imáms of the Faith of Muhammad, had, after the revolution of thirteen centuries, vanished like a smoke, an institution which had dealt such merciless blows to a Faith Whose Herald was Himself a descendant of the Imáms, the lawful successors of the Apostle of God.

To what else could this remarkable prophecy, enshrined in the Lawh-i-Burhán, allude if not to the downfall of this crowned overlord of sunní muslims? “*O concourse of muslim divines! Because of you the people were abased, and the banner of Islám was hauled down, and its mighty throne subverted.*” What of the indubitably clear and amazing prophecy recorded in the Qayyúmu'l-Asmá? “*Ere long We will, in very truth, torment such as waged war against Husayn (Imám Husayn), in the Land of the Euphrates, with the most afflictive torment, and the direst and most exemplary punishment.*” What other interpretation can this Muhammadan tradition be given? “*In the latter days a grievous calamity shall befall My people at the hands of their ruler, a calamity such as no man ever heard to surpass it.*”

This was not all, however. The disappearance of the caliph, the spiritual head of above two hundred million Muhammadans, brought in its wake, in the land that had dealt Islám such a heavy blow, the annulment of the sharí'ah canonical Law, the disendowment of sunní institutions, the promulgation of a civil Code, the suppression of

---

<sup>1</sup>. His Holiness the Prophet Muhammad.

religious orders, the abrogation of ceremonials and traditions inculcated by the religion of Muhammad. The *shaykhu'l-Islám* and his satellites, including *muftís*, *qádí*s, *hujahs*, *shaykhs*, *súfís*, *hájís*, *mawlavís*, dervishes, and others, vanished at a stroke more determined, more open, and drastic than the one dealt the *shí'íhs* by the *sháh* and his government. The mosques of the capital, the pride and glory of the Islamic world, were deserted, and the fairest and most famous of them all, the peerless St. Sophia, "the Second Firmament," "the Vehicle of the Cherubim," converted by the blatant creators of a secular regime into a museum. The Arabic tongue, the language of the Prophet of God, was banished from the land, its alphabet was superseded by Latin characters, and the *Qur'án* itself translated into Turkish for the few who still cared to read it. The constitution of the new Turkey not only proclaimed formally the disestablishment and disendowment of Islám, with all its attendant and, in the view of some, atheistic enactments, but also heralded various measures that aimed at its further humiliation and weakening. Even the city of Constantinople, "the Dome of Islám," apostrophized in such condemnatory terms by Bahá'u'lláh, which, after the fall of Byzantium, had been hailed by the great Constantine as "the New Rome," and exalted to the rank of the metropolis of both the Roman Empire and of Christendom, and subsequently revered as the seat of the Caliphs, was relegated to the position of a provincial city and stripped of all its pomp and glory, its soaring and slender minarets standing sentinel at the grave of so much vanished splendor and power.

"*O Spot<sup>1</sup> that art situate on the shores of the two seas!*" Bahá'u'lláh has thus apostrophized the Imperial City, in terms that call to mind the prophetic words addressed by Jesus Christ to Jerusalem, "*The throne of tyranny hath verily, been established upon thee, and the flame of hatred hath been kindled within thy bosom, in such wise that the Concourse on high, and they who circle around the Exalted Throne, have wailed and lamented. We behold in thee the foolish ruling over the wise, and darkness vaunting itself against the light. Thou*

i. Constantinople.

art indeed filled with manifest pride. Hath thine outward splendor made thee vainglorious? By Him Who is the Lord of mankind! It shall soon perish, and thy daughters, and thy widows, and all the kindreds that dwell within thee shall lament. Thus informeth thee the All-Knowing, the All-Wise."

Such was the fate that overtook both shí'ih and sunní Islám, in the two countries where they had planted their banners and reared their most powerful and far-famed institutions. Such was their fate in these two countries, in one of which Bahá'u'lláh died an exile, and in the other the Báb suffered a martyr's death. Such was the fate of the self-styled Vicar of the Prophet of God, and of the favorite ministers of the still awaited Imám.<sup>1</sup> "The people of the *Qur'án*," Bahá'u'lláh testifies, "have risen against Us, and tormented Us with such a torment that the Holy Spirit lamented, and the thunder roared out, and the clouds wept over Us . . . Muhammad, the Apostle of God, bewaileth, in the all-highest Paradise, their acts." "A day shall be witnessed by My people," their own traditions condemn them, "whereon there will have remained of Islám naught but a name, and of the *Qur'án* naught but a mere appearance. The doctors of that age shall be the most evil the world hath ever seen. Mischief hath proceeded from them, and on them it will recoil," and again: "Most of His enemies will be the divines. His bidding they will not obey, but will protest saying: 'This is contrary to that which hath been handed down unto us by the Imáms of the Faith.'" And still again: "At that hour His malediction shall descend upon you, and your curse shall afflict you, and your religion shall remain an empty word on your tongues. And when these signs appear amongst you, anticipate the day when the red-hot wind will have swept over you, or the day when ye will have been disfigured, or when stones will have rained upon you."

## A Warning Unto All Nations

These degraded priests, stigmatized by Bahá'u'lláh as "doctors of doubt," as the "abject manifestations of the Prince

---

1. Imam Mihdi, one of the Two Promised Ones of Islam, the other being the Return of Christ.

of *Darkness*,” as “*wolves*” and “*pharaohs*,” as “*focal centers of hellish fire*,” as “*voracious beasts preying upon the carrion of the souls of men*,” and, as testified by their own traditions, as both the sources and victims of mischief, have joined the various swarms of *sháh-zádihs*, of emirs, and prince-lings of fallen dynasties—a witness and a warning unto all nations of what must, sooner or later, befall those wielders of earthly dominion, be it royal or ecclesiastic, who might dare to challenge or persecute the appointed Channels and Embodiments of Divine authority and power.

Islám, at once the progenitor and persecutor of the Faith of Bahá'u'lláh, is, if we read aright the signs of the times, only beginning to sustain the impact of this invincible and triumphant Faith. We need only recall the nineteen hundred years of abject misery and dispersion which they who, only for the short space of three years, persecuted the Son of God have had to endure, and are still enduring. We may well ask ourselves, with mingled feelings of dread and awe, how severe must be the tribulations of those who, during no less than fifty years, have “*at every moment tormented with a fresh torment*” Him Who is the Father, and who have, in addition, made His Herald—Himself a Manifestation of God—to quaff, in such tragic circumstances, the cup of martyrdom.

I have, in the pages immediately preceding, quoted certain passages addressed collectively to the members of the ecclesiastical order, both Islamic and Christian, and have then recorded a number of specific addresses and references to Muslim divines, both *shí'ih* and *sunní*, after which I proceeded to describe the calamities that afflicted these Muhammadan hierarchies, their heads, their members, their properties, their ceremonials, and institutions. Let us now consider the addresses specifically made to the members of the Christian clerical order who, for the most part, have ignored the Faith of Bahá'u'lláh, whilst a few among them have, as its Administrative Order gained in stature and spread its ramifications over Christian countries, arisen to check its progress, to belittle its influence, and obscure its purpose.

## His Messages to Christian Leaders

A glance at the writings of the Author of the Bahá'í Revelation will reveal the important and significant fact that He Who addressed collectively an immortal message to all the kings of the earth, Who revealed a Tablet to each of the outstanding crowned heads of Europe and Asia, Who issued His call to the sacerdotal leaders of Islám, both sunní and shí'ih, Who did not exclude from His purview the Jews and the Zoroastrians, has, apart from His numerous and repeated exhortations and warnings to the entire Christian world, directed particular messages, some general, others precise and challenging, to the heads, as well as to the rank and file, of the ecclesiastical orders of Christendom—its pope, its kings, its patriarchs, its archbishops, its bishops, its priests, and its monks. We have already, in connection with the messages of Bahá'u'lláh to the crowned heads of the world, considered certain features of the Tablet to the Roman Pontiff, as well as the words written to the kings of Christendom. Let us now turn our attention to those passages in which the aristocracy of the church and its ordained servants are singled out for exhortation and admonition by the Pen of Bahá'u'lláh :

*“Say: O concourse of patriarchs! He Whom ye were promised in the Tablets is come. Fear God, and follow not the vain imaginings of the superstitious. Lay aside the things ye possess, and take fast hold of the Tablet of God by His sovereign power. Better is this for you than all your possessions. Unto this testifieth every understanding heart, and every man of insight. Pride ye yourselves on My Name, and yet shut yourselves out as by a veil from Me? This indeed is a strange thing!”*

*“Say: O concourse of archbishops! He Who is the Lord of all men hath appeared. In the plain of guidance He calleth mankind, whilst ye are numbered with the dead! Great is the blessedness of him who is stirred by the Breeze of God, and hath arisen from amongst the dead in this perspicuous Name.”*

*“Say: O concourse of bishops! Trembling hath seized all the kindreds of the earth, and He Who is the Everlasting*

*Father calleth aloud between earth and heaven. Blessed the ear that hath heard, and the eye that hath seen, and the heart that hath turned unto Him Who is the Point of Adoration of all who are in the heavens and all who are on earth.” “O concourse of bishops! Ye are the stars of the heaven of My knowledge. My mercy desireth not that ye should fall upon the earth. My justice, however, declareth: ‘This is that which the Son (Jesus) hath decreed.’ And whatsoever hath proceeded out of His blameless, His truth-speaking, trustworthy mouth, can never be altered. The bells, verily, peel out My Name and lament over Me, but My spirit rejoiceth with evident gladness. The body of the Loved One yearneth for the cross, and His head is eager for the spear, in the path of the All-Merciful. The ascendancy of the oppressor can in no wise deter Him from His purpose.” And again: “The stars of the heaven of knowledge have fallen, they that adduce the proofs they possess in order to demonstrate the truth of My Cause, and who make mention of God in My name. When I came unto them, in My majesty, however, they turned aside from Me. They, verily, are of the fallen. This is what the Spirit (Jesus) prophesied when He came with the truth, and the Jewish doctors cavilled at Him, until they committed what made the Holy Spirit to lament, and the eyes of such as enjoy near access to God to weep.”*

*“Say: O concourse of priests! Leave the bells, and come forth, then, from your churches. It behoveth you, in this day, to proclaim aloud the Most Great Name among the nations. Prefer ye to be silent, whilst every stone and every tree shouteth aloud: ‘The Lord is come in His great glory!’ . . . He that summoneth men in My name is, verily, of Me, and he will show forth that which is beyond the power of all that are on earth . . . Let the Breeze of God awaken you. Verily, it hath wafted over the world. Well is it with him that hath discovered the fragrance thereof and been accounted among the well-assured.” And again: “O concourse of priests! The Day of Reckoning hath appeared, the Day whereon He Who was in heaven hath come. He, verily, is the One Whom ye were promised in the Books of God, the Holy, the Almighty, the All-Praised. How long will ye wander in the wilderness of heedlessness and superstition? Turn with your hearts in the direction of your Lord, the Forgiving, the Generous.”*

“Say: O concourse of monks! Seclude not yourselves in churches and cloisters. Come forth by My leave, and occupy yourselves with that which will profit your souls and the souls of men. Thus biddeth you the King of the Day of Reckoning. Seclude yourselves in the stronghold of My love. This, verily, is a befitting seclusion, were ye of them that perceive it. He that shutteth himself up in a house is indeed as one dead. It behoveth man to show forth that which will profit all created things, and he that bringeth forth no fruit is fit for fire. Thus counselleth you your Lord, and He, verily, is the Almighty, the All-Bounteous. Enter ye into wedlock, that after you someone may fill your place. We have forbidden you perfidious acts, and not that which will demonstrate fidelity. Have ye clung to the standards fixed by your own selves, and cast the standards of God behind your backs? Fear God, and be not of the foolish. But for man, who would make mention of Me on My earth, and how could My attributes and My name have been revealed? Ponder ye, and be not of them that are veiled and fast asleep. He that wedded not (Jesus) found no place wherein to dwell or lay His head, by reason of that which the hands of the treacherous had wrought. His sanctity consisteth not in that which ye believe or fancy, but rather in the things We possess. Ask, that ye may apprehend His station which hath been exalted above the imaginings of all that dwell on earth. Blessed are they who perceive it.” And again: “O concourse of monks! If ye choose to follow Me, I will make you heirs of My Kingdom; and if ye transgress against Me, I will, in My long-suffering, endure it patiently, and I, verily, am the Ever-Forgiving, the All-Merciful... Bethlehem is astir with the Breeze of God. We hear her voice saying: ‘O most generous Lord! Where is Thy great glory established? The sweet savors of Thy presence have quickened me, after I had melted in my separation from Thee. Praised be Thou in that Thou hast raised the veils, and come with power in evident glory.’ We called unto her from behind the Tabernacle of Majesty and Grandeur: ‘O Bethlehem! This Light hath risen in the orient, and traveled towards the occident, until it reached thee in the evening of its life. Tell Me then: Do the sons recognize the Father, and acknowledge Him, or do they deny Him, even as the people aforetime denied Him (Jesus)?’ Whereupon she cried out saying: ‘Thou art, in truth, the All-Knowing, the Best-Informed.’” And again:

*“Consider, likewise, how numerous at this time are the monks who have secluded themselves in their churches, in My name, and who, when the appointed time came, and We unveiled to them Our beauty, failed to recognize Me, notwithstanding that they call upon Me at dawn and at even-tide.” “Read ye the Evangel,”* He again addresses them, *“and yet refuse to acknowledge the All-Glorious Lord? This indeed beseemeth you not, O concourse of learned men! . . . The fragrances of the All-Merciful have wafted over all creation. Happy the man that hath forsaken his desires, and taken fast hold of guidance.”*

These “fallen stars” of the firmament of Christendom, these “thick clouds” that have obscured the radiance of the true Faith of God, these princes of the Church that have failed to acknowledge the sovereignty of the “King of kings,” these deluded ministers of the Son who have shunned and ignored the promised Kingdom which the “Ever-lasting Father” has brought down from heaven, and is now establishing upon earth—these are experiencing in this “Day of Reckoning,” a crisis, not indeed as critical as that which the Islamic sacerdotal order, the inveterate enemies of the Faith, has had to face, but one which is no less widespread and significant. “Power hath been seized” indeed, and is being increasingly seized, from these ecclesiastics that speak in the name, and yet are so far away from the spirit of the Faith they profess.

We have only to look around us, as we survey the fortunes of Christian ecclesiastical orders, to appreciate the steady deterioration of their influence, the decline of their power, the damage to their prestige, the flouting of their authority, the dwindling of their congregations, the relaxation of their discipline, the restriction of their press, the timidity of their leaders, the confusion in their ranks, the progressive confiscation of their properties, the surrender of some of their most powerful strongholds, and the extinction of other ancient and cherished institutions. Indeed, ever since the Divine summons was issued, and the invitation extended, and the warning sounded, and the condemnation pronounced, this process, that may be said to have been initiated with the collapse of the temporal sovereignty of the Roman Pontiff, soon after the Tablet

to the Pope had been revealed, has been operating with increasing momentum, menacing the very basis on which the entire order is resting. Aided by the forces which the Communist movement has unloosed, reinforced by the political consequences of the last war, accelerated by the excessive, the blind, the intolerant, and militant nationalism which is now convulsing the nations, and stimulated by the rising tide of materialism, irreligion, and paganism, this process is not only tending to subvert ecclesiastical institutions, but appears to be leading to the rapid dechristianization of the masses in many Christian countries.

I shall content myself with the enumeration of certain outstanding manifestations of this force which is increasingly invading the domain, and assailing the firmest ramparts, of one of the leading religious systems of mankind. The virtual extinction of the temporal power of the most pre-eminent ruler in Christendom immediately after the creation of the Kingdom of Italy; the wave of anti-clericalism that swept over France after the collapse of the Napoleonic empire, and which culminated in the complete separation of the Catholic church from the state, in the laicization of the Third Republic, in the secularization of education, and in the suppression and dispersal of religious orders; the swift and sudden rise of that "religious irreligion," that bold, conscious, and organized assault launched in Soviet Russia against the Greek Orthodox Church, that precipitated the disestablishment of the state religion, that massacred a vast number of its members originally numbering above a hundred million souls, that pulled down, closed, or converted into museums, theatres and warehouses, thousands upon thousands of churches, monasteries, synagogues and mosques, that stripped the church of its six and a half million acres of property, and sought, through its League of Militant Atheists and the promulgation of a "five-year plan of godlessness," to loosen from its foundations the religious life of the masses; the dismemberment of the Austro-Hungarian Monarchy that dissolved, by one stroke, the most powerful unit which owed its allegiance to, and supported through its resources the administration of, the Church of Rome; the divorce of the

Spanish state from that same Church, and the overthrow of the monarchy, the champion of Catholic Christendom ; the nationalistic philosophy, the parent of an unbridled and obsolete nationalism, which, having dethroned Islám, has indirectly assaulted the front-line of the Christian church in non-Christian lands, and is dealing such heavy blows to Catholic, Anglican and Presbyterian Missions in Persia, Turkey, and the Far East ; the revolutionary movement that brought in its wake the persecution of the Catholic Church in Mexico ; and finally the gospel of modern paganism, unconcealed, aggressive, and unrelenting, which, in the years preceding the present turmoil, and increasingly since its outbreak, has swept over the continent of Europe, invading the citadels, and sowing confusion in the hearts of the supporters, of the Catholic, the Greek Orthodox, and the Lutheran churches, in Austria, Poland, the Baltic and Scandinavian states, and more recently in Western Europe, the home and centre of the most powerful hierarchies of Christendom.

## **Christian Nations Against Christian Nations**

What a sorry spectacle of impotence and disruption does this fratricidal war, which Christian nations are waging against Christian nations—Anglicans pitted against Lutherans, Catholics against Greek Orthodox, Catholics against Catholics, and Protestants against Protestants—in support of a so-called Christian civilization, offer to the eyes of those who are already perceiving the bankruptcy of the institutions that claim to speak in the name, and to be the custodians, of the Faith of Jesus Christ ! The powerlessness and despair of the Holy See to halt this internecine strife, in which the children of the Prince of Peace—blessed and supported by the benedictions and harangues of the prelates of a hopelessly divided church—are engaged, proclaim the degree of subservience into which the once all-powerful institutions of the Christian Faith have sunk, and are a striking reminder of the parallel

state of decadence into which the hierarchies of its sister religion have fallen.

How tragically has Christendom ignored, and how far it has strayed from, that high mission which He Who is the true Prince of Peace<sup>1</sup> has, in these, the concluding passages of His Tablet to Pope Pius IX, called upon the entire body of Christians to fulfil—passages which establish, for all time, the distinction between the Mission of Bahá'u'lláh in this age and that of Jesus Christ : “ *Say : O concourse of Christians ! We have, on a previous occasion, revealed Ourselves unto you, and ye recognized Me not. This is yet another occasion vouchsafed unto you. This is the Day of God ; turn ye unto Him . . . The Beloved One loveth not that ye be consumed with the fire of your desires. Were ye to be shut out as by a veil from Him, this would be for no other reason than your own waywardness and ignorance. Ye make mention of Me, and know Me not. Ye call upon Me, and are heedless of My Revelation . . . O people of the Gospel ! They who were not in the Kingdom have now entered it, whilst We behold you, in this day, tarrying at the gate. Rend the veils asunder by the power of your Lord, the Almighty, the All-Bounteous, and enter, then, in My name My Kingdom. Thus biddeth you He Who desireth for you everlasting life . . . We behold you, O children of the Kingdom, in darkness. This, verily, beseemeth you not. Are ye, in the face of the Light, fearful because of your deeds ? Direct yourselves towards Him . . . Verily, He (Jesus) said : ‘ Come ye after Me, and I will make you to become fishers of men.’ In this day, however, We say : ‘ Come ye after Me, that We may make you to become quickeners of mankind.’ ” “ *Say :*  ” He moreover has written, “ *We, verily, have come for your sakes, and have borne the misfortunes of the world for your salvation. Flee ye the One Who hath sacrificed His life that ye may be quickened ? Fear God, O followers of the Spirit (Jesus), and walk not in the footsteps of every divine that hath gone far astray . . . Open the doors of your hearts. He Who is the Spirit (Jesus) verily, standeth before them. Wherefore keep ye afar from Him Who hath purposed to draw you nigh unto a Resplendent Spot ? Say : We, in truth, have opened unto you the gates of the Kingdom.* ”*

<sup>1</sup>: Bahá'u'lláh.

*Will ye bar the doors of your houses in My face? This indeed is naught but a grievous error."*

Such is the pass to which the Christian clergy have come—a clergy that have interposed themselves between their flock and the Christ returned in the glory of the Father. As the Faith of this Promised One penetrates farther and farther into the heart of Christendom, as its recruits from the garrisons which its spirit is assailing multiply, and provoke a concerted and determined action in defense of the strongholds of Christian orthodoxy, and as the forces of nationalism, paganism, secularism and racialism move jointly towards a climax, might we not expect that the decline in the power, the authority, and the prestige of these ecclesiastics will be accentuated, and further demonstrate the truth, and more fully unfold the implications, of Bahá'u'lláh's pronouncement predicting the eclipse of the luminaries of the Church of Jesus Christ.

Devastating indeed has been the havoc wrought in the fortunes of the shí'ih hierarchy in Persia, and pitiable the lot reserved for its remnant now groaning under the yoke of a civil authority it had for centuries scorned and dominated. Cataclysmic indeed has been the collapse of the most pre-eminent institution of sunní Islám, and irretrievable the downfall of its hierarchy in a country that had championed the cause of the self-styled vicar of the Prophet of God. Steady and relentless is the process which has brought such destruction, shame, division, and weakness to the defenders of the strongholds of Christian ecclesiasticism, and black indeed are the clouds that darken its horizon. Through the actions of Muslim and Christian divines—“*idols*,” whom Bahá'u'lláh has stigmatized as constituting the majority of His enemies—who failed, as commanded by Him, to lay aside their pens and fling away their fancies, and who, as He Himself testified, had they believed in Him would have brought about the conversion of the masses, Islám and Christianity have, it would be no exaggeration to say, entered the most critical phase of their history.

Let none, however, mistake my purpose, or misrepresent this cardinal truth which is of the essence of the

Faith of Bahá'u'lláh. The divine origin of all the Prophets of God—including Jesus Christ and the Apostle of God, the two greatest Manifestations preceding the Revelation of the Báb—is unreservedly and unshakably upheld by each and every follower of the Bahá'í religion. The fundamental unity of these Messengers of God is clearly recognized, the continuity of their Revelations is affirmed, the God-given authority and correlative character of their Books is admitted, the singleness of their aims and purposes is proclaimed, the uniqueness of their influence emphasized, the ultimate reconciliation of their teachings and followers taught and anticipated. “*They all,*” according to Bahá'u'lláh’s testimony, “*abide in the same tabernacle, soar in the same heaven, are seated upon the same throne, utter the same speech, and proclaim the same Faith.*”

## The Continuity of Revelation

The Faith standing identified with the name of Bahá'u'lláh disclaims any intention to belittle any of the Prophets gone before Him, to whittle down any of their teachings, to obscure, however slightly, the radiance of their Revelations, to oust them from the hearts of their followers, to abrogate the fundamentals of their doctrines, to discard any of their revealed Books, or to suppress the legitimate aspirations of their adherents. Repudiating the claim of any religion to be the final revelation of God to man, disclaiming finality for His own Revelation, Bahá'u'lláh inculcates the basic principle of the relativity of religious truth, the continuity of Divine Revelation, the progressiveness of religious experience. His aim is to widen the basis of all revealed religions and to unravel the mysteries of their scriptures. He insists on the unqualified recognition of the unity of their purpose, restates the eternal verities they enshrine, co-ordinates their functions, distinguishes the essential and the authentic from the non-essential and spurious in their teachings, separates the God-given truths from the priest-prompted superstitions, and on this as a basis proclaims the possibility, and even

prophesies the inevitability, of their unification, and the consummation of their highest hopes.

As to Muhammad, the Apostle of God, let none among His followers who read these pages, think for a moment that either Islám, or its Prophet, or His Book, or His appointed Successors, or any of His authentic teachings, have been, or are to be in any way, or to however slight a degree, disparaged. The lineage of the Báb, the descendant of the Imám Husayn; the divers and striking evidences, in Nabi'l's Narrative, of the attitude of the Herald of our Faith towards the Founder, the Imáms, and the Book of Islám; the glowing tributes paid by Bahá'u'lláh in the Kitáb-i-Íqán to Muhammad and His lawful Successors, and particularly to the "*peerless and incomparable*" Imám Husayn; the arguments adduced, forcibly, fearlessly, and publicly by 'Abdu'l-Bahá, in churches and synagogues, to demonstrate the validity of the Message of the Arabian Prophet; and last but not least the written testimonial of the Queen of Rumania,<sup>1</sup> who, born in the Anglican faith and notwithstanding the close alliance of her government with the Greek Orthodox Church, the state religion of her adopted country, has, largely as a result of the perusal of these public discourses of 'Abdu'l-Bahá, been prompted to proclaim her recognition of the prophetic function of Muhammad—all proclaim, in no uncertain terms, the true attitude of the Bahá'í Faith towards its parent religion.

"God," is her royal tribute, "is All, everything. He is the power behind all beginnings. . . . His is the Voice within us that shows us good and evil. But mostly we ignore or misunderstand this voice. Therefore, did He choose His Elect to come down amongst us upon earth to make clear His Word, His real meaning. Therefore, the Prophets; therefore, Christ, Muhammad, Bahá'u'lláh, for man needs from time to time a voice upon earth to bring God to him, to sharpen the realization of the existence of the true God. Those voices sent to us had to become flesh, so that with our earthly ears we should be able to hear and understand."

<sup>1</sup>. The Dowager Queen Marie of Rumania.

What greater proof, it may be pertinently asked, can the divines of either Persia or Turkey require wherewith to demonstrate the recognition by the followers of Bahá'u'lláh of the exalted position occupied by the Prophet Muhammad among the entire company of the Messengers of God? What greater service do these divines expect us to render the Cause of Islám? What greater evidence of our competence can they demand than that we should kindle, in quarters so far beyond their reach, the spark of an ardent and sincere conversion to the truth voiced by the Apostle of God, and obtain from the pen of royalty this public, and indeed historic, confession of His God-given Mission?

As to the position of Christianity, let it be stated without any hesitation or equivocation that its divine origin is unconditionally acknowledged, that the Sonship and Divinity of Jesus Christ are fearlessly asserted, that the divine inspiration of the Gospel is fully recognized, that the reality of the mystery of the Immaculacy of the Virgin Mary is confessed, and the primacy of Peter, the Prince of the Apostles, is upheld and defended. The Founder of the Christian Faith is designated by Bahá'u'lláh as the "*Spirit of God*," is proclaimed as the One Who "*appeared out of the breath of the Holy Ghost*," and is even extolled as the "*Essence of the Spirit*." His mother is described as "*that veiled and immortal, that most beauteous countenance*," and the station of her Son eulogized as a "*station which hath been exalted above the imaginings of all that dwell on earth*," whilst Peter is recognized as one whom God has caused "*the mysteries of wisdom and utterance to flow out of his mouth*." "*Know thou*," Bahá'u'lláh has moreover testified, "*that when the Son of Man yielded up His breath to God, the whole creation wept with a great weeping. By sacrificing Himself, however, a fresh capacity was infused into all created things. Its evidences, as witnessed in all the peoples of the earth, are now manifest before thee. The deepest wisdom which the sages have uttered, the profoundest learning which any mind hath unfolded, the arts which the ablest hands have produced, the influence exerted by the most potent of rulers, are but manifestations of the quickening power released by His*

transcendent, His all-pervasive and resplendent Spirit. We testify that when He came into the world, He shed the splendor of His glory upon all created things. Through Him the leper recovered from the leprosy of perversity and ignorance. Through Him the unchaste and wayward were healed. Through His power, born of Almighty God, the eyes of the blind were opened and the soul of the sinner sanctified. . . . He it is Who purified the world. Blessed is the man who, with a face beaming with light, hath turned towards Him."

Indeed, the essential prerequisites of admittance into the Bahá'í fold of Jews, Zoroastrians, Hindus, Buddhists, and the followers of other ancient faiths, as well as of agnostics and even atheists, is the whole-hearted and unqualified acceptance by them all of the Divine origin of both Islám and Christianity, of the Prophetic functions of both Muhammad and Jesus Christ, of the legitimacy of the institution of the Imamate, and of the primacy of St. Peter, the Prince of the Apostles. Such are the central, the solid, the incontrovertible principles that constitute the bed-rock of Bahá'í belief which the Faith of Bahá'u'lláh is proud to acknowledge, which its teachers proclaim, which its apologists defend, which its literature disseminates, which its summer schools expound, and which the rank and file of its followers attest by both word and deed.

Nor should it be thought for a moment that the followers of Bahá'u'lláh either seek to degrade or even belittle the rank of the world's religious leaders, whether Christian, Muslim, or of any other denomination, should their conduct conform to their professions, and be worthy of the position they occupy. "*Those divines*," Bahá'u'lláh has affirmed, ". . . who are truly adorned with the ornament of knowledge and of a goodly character are, verily, as a head to the body of the world, and as eyes to the nations. The guidance of men hath, at all times, been and is dependent upon these blessed souls." And again: "The divine whose conduct is upright, and the sage who is just, are as the spirit unto the body of the world. Well is it with that divine whose head is attired with the crown of justice, and whose temple is adorned with the ornament of equity." And yet again: "The divine

*who hath seized and quaffed the most holy Wine, in the name of the sovereign Ordainer, is as an eye unto the world. Well is it with them who obey him, and call him to remembrance.”* “Great is the blessedness of that divine,” He, in another connection has written, “that hath not allowed knowledge to become a veil between him and the One Who is the Object of all knowledge, and who, when the Self-Subsisting appeared, hath turned with a beaming face towards Him. He, in truth, is numbered with the learned. The inmates of Paradise seek the blessing of his breath, and his lamp sheddeth its radiance over all who are in heaven and on earth. He, verily, is numbered with the inheritors of the Prophets. He that beholdeth him hath, verily, beheld the True One, and he that turneth towards him hath, verily, turned towards God, the Almighty, the All-Wise.” “Respect ye the divines amongst you,” is His exhortation, “they whose acts conform to the knowledge they possess, who observe the statutes of God, and decree the things God hath decreed in the Book. Know ye that they are the lamps of guidance betwixt earth and heaven. They that have no consideration for the position and merit of the divines amongst them have, verily, altered the bounty of God vouchsafed unto them.”

Dear friends! I have, in the preceding pages, attempted to represent this world-afflicting ordeal that has laid its grip upon mankind as primarily a judgment of God pronounced against the peoples of the earth, who, for a century,<sup>1</sup> have refused to recognize the One<sup>2</sup> Whose advent had been promised to all religions, and in Whose Faith all nations can alone, and must eventually, seek their true salvation.<sup>3</sup> I have quoted certain passages from the writings of Bahá'u'lláh and the Báb that reveal the character, and foreshadow the occurrence of this divinely-inflicted visitation. I have enumerated the woeful trials with which the Faith, its Herald, its Founder, and its Exemplar, have been afflicted, and exposed the tragic failure of the generality of mankind and its leaders to protest against these tribulations, and to acknowledge the claims

1. Since 1844 A.D.

2. Bahá'u'lláh; literally the “Glory of God.”

3. Isaiah LXII, 1 and XXV, 9.

advanced by those Who bore them. I have, moreover, indicated that a direct, an awful, an inescapable responsibility rested on the sovereigns of the earth and the world's religious leaders who, in the days of the Báb and Bahá'u'lláh, held within their grasp the reins of absolute political and religious authority. I have also endeavored to show how, as a result of the direct and active antagonism of some of them to the Faith, and the neglect by others of their unquestioned duty to investigate its truth, and its claims, to vindicate its innocence, and avenge its injuries, both kings and ecclesiastics have been, and are still being, subjected to the dire punishments which their sins of omission and commission have provoked. I have, owing to the chief responsibility which they incurred, as a result of the undisputed ascendancy they held over their subjects and followers, quoted extensively from the messages, the exhortations and warnings addressed to them by the Founders of our Faith, and expatiated on the consequences that have flowed from these momentous and epoch-making utterances.

This great retributive calamity, for which the world's supreme leaders, both secular and religious, are to be regarded as primarily answerable, as testified by Bahá'u'lláh, should not, if we would correctly appraise it, be regarded solely as a punishment meted out by God to a world that has, for a hundred years, persisted in its refusal to embrace the truth of the redemptive Message proffered to it by the supreme Messenger<sup>1</sup> of God in this day. It should be viewed also, though to a lesser degree, in the light of a divine retribution for the perversity of the human race in general, in casting itself adrift from those elementary principles which must, at all times, govern, and can alone safeguard, the life and progress of mankind. Humanity has, alas, with increasing insistence, preferred, instead of acknowledging and adoring the Spirit of God as embodied in His religion in this day, to worship those false idols, untruths and half-truths, which are obscuring its religions, corrupting its spiritual life, convulsing its

---

1. Bahá'u'lláh.

political institutions, corroding its social fabric, and shattering its economic structure.

Not only have the peoples of the earth ignored, and some of them even assailed, a Faith<sup>1</sup> which is at once the essence, the promise, the reconciler, and the unifier of all religions, but they have drifted away from their own religions, and set up on their subverted altars other gods wholly alien not only to the spirit but to the traditional forms of their ancient faiths.

*“The face of the world,”* Bahá’u’lláh laments, *“hath altered. The way of God and the religion of God have ceased to be of any worth in the eyes of men.”* *“The vitality of men’s belief in God,”* He also has written, *“is dying out in every land . . . The corrosion of ungodliness is eating into the vitals of human society.”* *“Religion,”* He affirms, *“is verily the chief instrument for the establishment of order in the world, and of tranquillity amongst its peoples. . . . The greater the decline of religion, the more grievous the waywardness of the ungodly. This cannot but lead in the end to chaos and confusion.”* And again: *“Religion is a radiant light and an impregnable stronghold for the protection and welfare of the peoples of the world.”* *“As the body of man,”* He, in another connection, has written, *“needeth a garment to clothe it, so the body of mankind must needs be adorned with the mantle of justice and wisdom. Its robe is the Revelation vouchsafed unto it by God.”*

## The Three False Gods

This vital force is dying out, this mighty agency has been scorned, this radiant light is obscured, this impregnable stronghold abandoned, this beauteous robe discarded. God Himself has indeed been dethroned from the hearts of men, and an idolatrous world passionately and clamorously hails and worships the false gods which its own idle fancies have fatuously created, and its misguided hands so impiously exalted. The chief idols in the desecrated temple of mankind are none other than the triple gods of Nationalism, Racialism and Communism,

---

1. The Bahai Faith.

at whose altars governments and peoples, whether democratic or totalitarian, at peace or at war, of the East or of the West, Christian or Islamic, are, in various forms and in different degrees, now worshipping. Their high priests are the politicians and the worldly-wise, the so-called sages of the age; their sacrifice, the flesh and blood of the slaughtered multitudes; their incantations out-worn shibboleths and insidious and irreverent formulas; their incense, the smoke of anguish that ascends from the lacerated hearts of the bereaved, the maimed, and the homeless.

The theories and policies, so unsound, so pernicious, which deify the state and exalt the nation above mankind, which seek to subordinate the sister races of the world to one single race, which discriminate between the black and the white, and which tolerate the dominance of one privileged class over all others—these are the dark, the false, and crooked doctrines for which any man or people who believes in them, or acts upon them, must, sooner or later, incur the wrath and chastisement of God.

*“Movements,”* is the warning sounded by ‘Abdu’l-Bahá, *“newly-born and world-wide in their range, will exert their utmost effort for the advancement of their designs. The Movement of the Left will acquire great importance. Its influence will spread.”*

Contrasting with, and irreconcilably opposed to, these war-engendering, world-convulsing doctrines, are the healing, the saving, the pregnant truths proclaimed by Bahá’u’lláh, the Divine Organizer and Saviour of the whole human race—truths which should be regarded as the animating force and the hall-mark of His Revelation: *“The world is but one country, and mankind its citizens.”* *“Let not a man glory in that he loves his country; let him rather glory in this, that he loves his kind.”* And again: *“Ye are the fruits of one tree, and the leaves of one branch.”* *“Bend your minds and wills to the education of the peoples and kindreds of the earth, that haply . . . all mankind may become the upholders of one order, and the inhabitants of one city . . . Ye dwell in one world, and have been created through the operation of one Will.”* *“Beware lest the desires of the flesh and of a*

*corrupt inclination provoke divisions among you. Be ye as the fingers of one hand, the members of one body.”* And yet again : “ *All the saplings of the world have appeared from one Tree, and all the drops from one Ocean, and all beings owe their existence to one Being.*” And furthermore : “ *That one indeed is a man who today dedicateth himself to the service of the entire human race.*”

## The Weakened Pillars of Religion

Not only must irreligion and its monstrous offspring, the triple curse<sup>1</sup> that oppresses the soul of mankind in this day, be held responsible for the ills which are so tragically besetting it, but other evils and vices, which are, for the most part, the direct consequences of the “ *weakening of the pillars of religion,*” must also be regarded as contributory factors to the manifold guilt of which individuals and nations stand convicted. The signs of moral downfall, consequent to the dethronement of religion and the enthronement of these usurping idols, are too numerous and too patent for even a superficial observer of the state of present-day society to fail to notice. The spread of lawlessness, of drunkenness, of gambling, and of crime ; the inordinate love of pleasure, of riches, and other earthly vanities ; the laxity in morals, revealing itself in the irresponsible attitude towards marriage, in the weakening of parental control, in the rising tide of divorce, in the deterioration in the standard of literature and of the press, and in the advocacy of theories that are the very negation of purity, of morality and chastity—these evidences of moral decadence, invading both the East and the West, permeating every stratum of society, and instilling their poison in its members of both sexes, young and old alike, blacken still further the scroll upon which are inscribed the manifold transgressions of an unrepentant humanity.

Small wonder that Bahá’u’lláh, the Divine Physician, should have declared : “ *In this day the tastes of men have changed, and their power of perception hath altered. The contrary winds of the world, and its colors, have provoked a cold, and deprived men’s nostrils of the sweet savors of Revelation.*”

1. Nationalism, Racialism, Communism.

Brimful and bitter indeed is the cup of humanity that has failed to respond to the summons of God as voiced by His Supreme Messenger, that has dimmed the lamp of its faith in its Creator, that has transferred, in so great a measure, the allegiance owed Him to the gods of its own invention, and polluted itself with the evils and vices which such a transference must necessarily engender.

Dear friends ! It is in this light that we, the followers of Bahá'u'lláh, should regard this visitation of God which, in the concluding years of the first century of the Bahá'í era,<sup>1</sup> afflicts the generality, and has thrown into such a bewildering confusion the affairs, of mankind. It is because of this dual guilt, the things it has done and the things it has left undone, its misdeeds as well as its dismal and signal failure to accomplish its clear and unmistakable duty towards God, His Messenger, and His Faith, that this grievous ordeal, whatever its immediate political and economic causes, has laid its adamantine grip upon it.

God, however, as has been pointed out in the very beginning of these pages, does not only punish the wrong-doings of His children. He chastises because He is just, and He chastens because He loves. Having chastened them, He cannot, in His great mercy, leave them to their fate. Indeed, by the very act of chastening them He prepares them for the mission for which He has created them. "*My calamity is My providence,*" He, by the mouth of Bahá'u'lláh, has assured them, "*outwardly it is fire and vengeance, but inwardly it is light and mercy.*"

The flames which His Divine justice have kindled cleanse an unregenerate humanity, and fuse its discordant, its warring elements as no other agency can cleanse or fuse them. It is not only a retributory and destructive fire, but a disciplinary and creative process, whose aim is the salvation, through unification, of the entire planet. Mysteriously, slowly, and resistlessly God accomplishes His design, though the sight that meets our eyes in this day be the spectacle of a world hopelessly entangled in its own meshes, utterly careless of the Voice which, for a century, has been calling it to God, and miserably subservient to

the siren voices which are attempting to lure it into the vast abyss.

## God's Purpose

God's purpose is none other than to usher in, in ways He alone can bring about, and the full significance of which He alone can fathom, the Great, the Golden Age of a long-divided, a long-afflicted humanity. Its present state, indeed even its immediate future, is dark, distressingly dark. Its distant future,<sup>1</sup> however, is radiant, gloriously radiant—so radiant that no eye can visualize it.

“*The winds of despair*,” writes Bahá'u'lláh, as He surveys the immediate destinies of mankind, “*are, alas, blowing from every direction, and the strife that divides and afflicts the human race is daily increasing. The signs of impending convulsions and chaos can now be discerned, inasmuch as the prevailing order appears to be lamentably defective.*” “*Such shall be its plight*,” He, in another connection, has declared, “*that to disclose it now would not be meet and seemly.*” “*These fruitless strifes*,” He, on the other hand, contemplating the future of mankind, has emphatically prophesied, in the course of His memorable interview with the Persian orientalist, Edward G. Browne, “*these ruinous wars shall pass away, and the ‘Most Great Peace’ shall come*”<sup>2</sup> . . . . *These strifes and this bloodshed and discord must cease, and all men be as one kindred and one family.*” “*Soon*,” He predicts, “*will the present-day order be rolled up, and a new one spread out in its stead.*” “*After a time*,” He also has written, “*all the governments on earth will change. Oppression will envelop the world. And following a universal convulsion, the sun of justice will rise from the horizon of the unseen realm.*” “*The whole earth*,” He, moreover, has stated, “*is now in a state of pregnancy. The day is approaching when it will have yielded its noblest fruits, when from it will have sprung forth the loftiest trees, the most enchanting blossoms, the most heavenly blessings.*” “*All nations and kindreds*,” ‘Abdu'l-Bahá likewise has written, “*... will become a single nation. Religious and sectarian antagonism, the hostility of races and*

1. After 1957 A.D.

2. In 1957 A.D.

*peoples, and differences among nations, will be eliminated. All men will adhere to one religion, will have one common faith, will be blended into one race, and become a single people. All will dwell in one common fatherland, which is the planet itself."*

What we witness at the present time, during "this gravest crisis in the history of civilization," recalling such times in which "religions have perished and are born," is the adolescent stage in the slow and painful evolution of humanity, preparatory to the attainment of the stage of manhood, the stage of maturity, the promise of which is embedded in the teachings, and enshrined in the prophecies, of Bahá'u'lláh. The tumult of this age of transition is characteristic of the impetuosity and irrational instincts of youth, its follies, its prodigality, its pride, its self-assurance, its rebelliousness, and contempt of discipline.

## The Great Age to Come

The ages of its infancy and childhood are past, never again to return, while the Great Age, the consummation of all ages, which must signalize the coming of age of the entire human race, is yet to come. The convulsions of this transitional and most turbulent period in the annals of humanity are the essential prerequisites, and herald the inevitable approach, of that Age of Ages, "*the time of the end*," in which the folly and tumult of strife that has, since the dawn of history, blackened the annals of mankind, will have been finally transmuted into the wisdom and the tranquillity of an undisturbed, a universal, and lasting peace in which the discord and separation of the children of men will have given way to the world-wide reconciliation, and the complete unification of the divers elements that constitute human society.

This will indeed be the fitting climax of that process of integration which, starting with the family, the smallest unit in the scale of human organization, must, after having called successively into being the tribe, the city-state and the nation, continue to operate until it culminates in the unification of the whole world, the final object and the

crowning glory of human evolution on this planet. It is this stage which humanity, willingly or unwillingly, is resistlessly approaching. It is for this stage that this vast, this fiery ordeal which humanity is experiencing is mysteriously paving the way. It is with this stage that the fortunes and the purpose of the Faith of Bahá'u'lláh are indissolubly linked. It is the creative energies which His Revelation has released in the "year sixty,<sup>1</sup>" and later reinforced by the successive effusions of celestial power vouchsafed in the "year nine<sup>2</sup>" and the "year eighty<sup>3</sup>" to all mankind, that have instilled into humanity the capacity to attain this final stage in its organic and collective evolution. It is with the Golden Age<sup>4</sup> of His Dispensation that the consummation of this process will be for ever associated. It is the structure of His New World Order, now stirring in the womb of the administrative institutions He Himself has created, that will serve both as a pattern and a nucleus of that world commonwealth which is the sure, the inevitable destiny of the peoples and nations of the earth.

Just as the organic evolution of mankind has been slow and gradual, and involved successively the unification of the family, the tribe, the city-state, and the nation, so has the light vouchsafed by the Revelation of God, at various stages in the evolution of religion, and reflected in the successive Dispensations of the past, been slow and progressive. Indeed the measure of Divine Revelation, in every age, has been adapted to, and commensurate with, the degree of social progress achieved in that age by a constantly-evolving humanity.

"*It hath been decreed by Us,*" explains Bahá'u'lláh, "*that the Word of God, and all the potentialities thereof, shall be manifested unto men in strict conformity with such conditions as have been fore-ordained by Him Who is the All-Knowing, the All-Wise . . . . Should the Word be allowed to release suddenly all the energies latent within it, no man could sustain the*

1. 1260 A.H. (corresponding to 1844 A.D.)—Declaration of the Bab.

2. 1269 A. H. (corresponding to 1853 A.D.) when Bahá'u'lláh became a Leader of the Babis, after the Martyrdom of the Bab.

3. 1280 A. H. (corresponding to 1863 A.D.)—Declaration of Bahá'u'lláh.

4. After 1957 A. D. when the Universal House of Justice will be established and the Most Great Peace shall come.

*weight of so mighty a Revelation.” “All created things,” ‘Abdu’l-Bahá<sup>1</sup> elucidating this truth, has affirmed, “have their degree or stage of maturity. The period of maturity in the life of a tree is the time of its fruit-bearing. . . . The animal attains a stage of full growth and completeness, and in the human kingdom man reaches his maturity when the light of his intelligence attains its greatest power and development. . . . Similarly there are periods and stages in the collective life of humanity. At one time it was passing through its stage of childhood, at another its period of youth, but now it has entered its long-predicted phase of maturity, the evidences of which are everywhere apparent. . . . That which was applicable to human needs during the early history of the race can neither meet nor satisfy the demands of this day, this period of newness and consummation. Humanity has emerged from its former state of limitation and preliminary training. Man must now become imbued with new virtues and powers, new moral standards, new capacities. New bounties, perfect bestowals, are awaiting and already descending upon him. The gifts and blessings of the period of youth, although timely and sufficient during the adolescence of mankind, are now incapable of meeting the requirements of its maturity.” “In every Dispensation,” He moreover has written, “the light of Divine Guidance has been focussed upon one central theme. . . . In this wondrous Revelation,<sup>2</sup> this glorious century, the foundation of the Faith of God, and the distinguishing feature of His Law, is the consciousness of the oneness of mankind.”*

## Religion and Social Evolution

The Revelation associated with the Faith of Jesus Christ focussed attention primarily on the redemption of the individual and the moulding of his conduct, and stressed, as its central theme, the necessity of inculcating a high standard of morality and discipline into man, as the fundamental unit in human society. Nowhere in the Gospels

1. The eldest son of Baha’u’llah and the Authorised Interpreter of the Word of God.

2. The Bahai Revelation.

do we find any reference to the unity of nations or the unification of mankind as a whole. When Jesus spoke to those around Him, He addressed them primarily as individuals rather than as component parts of one universal, indivisible entity. The whole surface of the earth was as yet unexplored, and the organization of all its peoples and nations as one unit could, consequently, not be envisaged, how much less proclaimed or established. What other interpretation can be given to these words, addressed specifically by Bahá'u'lláh to the followers of the Gospel, in which the fundamental distinction between the Mission of Jesus Christ, concerning primarily the individual, and His own Message, directed more particularly to mankind as a whole, has been definitely established: "*Verily, He (Jesus) said: 'Come ye after Me, and I will make you to become fishers of men.'* In this day, however, We say: '*Come ye after Me, that We may make you to become the quickeners of mankind.'*"

The Faith of Islám, the succeeding link in the chain of Divine Revelation, introduced, as Bahá'u'lláh Himself testifies, the conception of the nation as a unit and a vital stage in the organization of human society, and embodied it in its teaching. This indeed is what is meant by this brief yet highly significant and illuminating pronouncement of Bahá'u'lláh: "*Of old (Islamic Dispensation) it hath been revealed: 'Love of one's country is an element of the Faith of God.'*" This principle was established and stressed by the Apostle of God, inasmuch as the evolution of human society required it at that time. Nor could any stage above and beyond it have been envisaged, as world conditions preliminary to the establishment of a superior form of organization were as yet unobtainable. The conception of nationality, the attainment to the state of nationhood, may, therefore, be said to be the distinguishing characteristics of the Muhammadan Dispensation, in the course of which the nations and races of the world, and particularly in Europe and America, were unified and achieved political independence.

'Abdu'l-Bahá Himself elucidates this truth in one of His Tablets: "*In cycles gone by, though harmony was estab-*

lisbed, yet, owing to the absence of means, the unity of all mankind could not have been achieved. Continents remained widely divided, nay even among the peoples of one and the same continent association and interchange of thought were well-nigh impossible. Consequently intercourse, understanding and unity amongst all the peoples and kindreds of the earth were unattainable. In this day, however, means of communication have multiplied, and the five continents of the earth have virtually merged into one . . . In like manner all the members of the human family, whether peoples or governments, cities or villages, have become increasingly interdependent. For none self-sufficiency is any longer possible, inasmuch as political ties unite all peoples and nations, and the bonds of trade and industry, of agriculture and education, are being strengthened every day. Hence the unity of all mankind can in this day be achieved. Verily this is none other but one of the wonders of this wondrous age, this glorious century. Of this, past ages have been deprived, for this century—the century of light—has been endowed with unique and unprecedented glory, power and illumination. Hence the miraculous unfolding of a fresh marvel every day. Eventually it will be seen how bright its candles will burn in the assemblage of man."

"Behold," He further explains, "how its light is now dawning upon the world's darkened horizon. The first candle is unity in the political realm, the early glimmerings of which can now be discerned. The second candle is unity of thought in world undertakings, the consummation of which will ere long be witnessed. The third candle is unity in freedom which will surely come to pass. The fourth candle is unity in religion which is the cornerstone of the foundation itself, and which, by the power of God, will be revealed in all its splendour. The fifth candle is the unity of nations—a unity which, in this century,<sup>1</sup> will be securely established, causing all the peoples of the world to regard themselves as citizens of one common fatherland. The sixth candle is unity of races, making of all that dwell on earth peoples and kindreds of one race. The seventh candle is unity of language, i.e., the choice of a universal tongue in which all peoples will be instructed and converse. Each and every one of these will inevitably come to pass, inasmuch as the

*power of the Kingdom of God will aid and assist in their realization."*

"One of the great events," 'Abdu'l-Bahá in His "Some Answered Questions" affirmed, "which is to occur in the Day of the manifestation of that Incomparable Branch (Bahá'u'lláh) is the hoisting of the Standard of God among all nations. By this is meant that all nations and kindreds will be gathered together under the shadow of this Divine Banner, which is no other than the Lordly Branch itself, and will become a single nation. Religious and sectarian antagonism, the hostility of races and peoples, and differences among nations, will be eliminated. All men will adhere to one religion, will have one common faith, will be blended into one race, and become a single people. All will dwell in one common fatherland, which is the planet itself."

This is the stage which the world is now approaching, the stage of world unity, which, as 'Abdu'l-Bahá assures us, will, in this century, be securely established. "The Tongue of Grandeur," Bahá'u'lláh Himself affirms, "hath... in the Day of His Manifestation proclaimed: 'It is not his to boast who loveth his country, but it is his who loveth the world.'" "Through the power," He adds, "released by these exalted words He hath lent a fresh impulse, and set a new direction, to the birds of men's hearts, and hath obliterated every trace of restriction and limitation from God's Holy Book."<sup>1</sup>

## The Wider, Inclusive Loyalty

A word of warning should, however, be uttered in this connection. The love of one's country, instilled and stressed by the teaching of Islám, as "an element of the Faith of God" has not, through this declaration, this clarion-call of Bahá'u'lláh, been either condemned or disparaged. It should not, indeed it cannot, be construed as a repudiation, or regarded in the light of a censure pronounced against, a sane and intelligent patriotism, nor does it seek to undermine the allegiance and loyalty of any individual to his country, nor does it conflict with the legitimate aspirations,

---

<sup>1</sup>. Bahá'u'lláh's *Kitab-i-Aqdas*, the Book of Laws.

rights, and duties of any individual state or nation. All it does imply and proclaim is the insufficiency of patriotism, in view of the fundamental changes effected in the economic life of society and the interdependence of the nations, and as the consequence of the contraction of the world, through the revolution in the means of transportation and communication—conditions that did not and could not exist either in the days of Jesus Christ or of Muhammad. It calls for a wider loyalty, which should not, and indeed does not, conflict with lesser loyalties. It instills a love which, in view of its scope, must include and not exclude the love of one's own country. It lays, through this loyalty which it inspires, and this love which it infuses, the only foundation on which the concept of world citizenship can thrive, and the structure of world unification can rest. It does insist, however, on the subordination of national considerations and particularistic interests to the imperative and paramount claims of humanity as a whole, inasmuch as in a world of interdependent nations and peoples the advantage of the part is best to be reached by the advantage of the whole.

The world is, in truth, moving on towards its destiny. The interdependence of the peoples and nations of the earth, whatever the leaders of the divisive forces of the world may say or do, is already an accomplished fact. Its unity in the economic sphere is now understood and recognized. The welfare of the part means the welfare of the whole, and the distress of the part brings distress to the whole. The Revelation of Bahá'u'lláh has, in His own words, "*lent a fresh impulse and set a new direction*" to this vast process now operating in the world. The fires lit by this great ordeal are the consequences of men's failure to recognize it. They are, moreover, hastening its consummation. Adversity, prolonged, world-wide, afflictive, allied to chaos and universal destruction, must needs convulse the nations, stir the conscience of the world, disillusion the masses, precipitate a radical change in the very conception of society, and coalesce ultimately the disjointed, the bleeding limbs of mankind into one body, single, organically united, and indivisible.

## World Commonwealth

To the general character, the implications and features of this world commonwealth, destined to emerge, sooner or later, out of the carnage, agony, and havoc of this great world convulsion, I have already referred in my previous communications. Suffice it to say that this consummation will, by its very nature, be a gradual process, and must, as Bahá'u'lláh has Himself anticipated, lead at first to the establishment of that Lesser Peace which the nations of the earth, as yet unconscious of His Revelation and yet unwittingly enforcing the general principles which He has enunciated, will themselves establish. This momentous and historic step, involving the reconstruction of mankind, as the result of the universal recognition of its oneness and wholeness, will bring in its wake the spiritualization of the masses, consequent to the recognition of the character, and the acknowledgment of the claims, of the Faith of Bahá'u'lláh—the essential condition to that ultimate fusion of all races, creeds, classes, and nations which must signalize the emergence of His New World Order.

Then will the coming of age of the entire human race be proclaimed and celebrated by all the peoples and nations of the earth. Then will the banner of the Most Great Peace be hoisted. Then will the world-wide sovereignty of Bahá'u'lláh—the Establisher of the Kingdom of the Father foretold by the Son, and anticipated by the Prophets of God before Him<sup>1</sup> and after Him<sup>1</sup>—be recognized, acclaimed, and firmly established. Then will a world civilization be born, flourish, and perpetuate itself, a civilization with a fullness of life such as the world has never seen nor can as yet conceive. Then will the Everlasting Covenant be fulfilled in its completeness. Then will the promise enshrined in all the Books of God be redeemed, and all the prophecies uttered by the Prophets of old come to pass, and the vision of seers and poets be realized. Then will the planet, galvanized through the universal belief of its dwellers in one God, and their allegiance to one common

---

1. Jesus Christ.

Revelation, mirror, within the limitations imposed upon it, the effulgent glories of the sovereignty of Bahá'u'lláh, shining in the plenitude of its splendor in the Abhá Paradise, and be made the footstool of His Throne on high, and acclaimed as the earthly heaven, capable of fulfilling that ineffable destiny fixed for it, from time immemorial, by the love and wisdom of its Creator.

Not ours, puny mortals that we are, to attempt, at so critical a stage in the long and checkered history of mankind to arrive at a precise and satisfactory understanding of the steps which must successively lead a bleeding humanity, wretchedly oblivious of its God, and careless of Bahá'u'lláh, from its calvary to its ultimate resurrection. Not ours, the living witnesses of the all-subduing potency of His Faith,<sup>1</sup> to question, for a moment, and however dark the misery that enshrouds the world, the ability of Bahá'u'lláh to forge, with the hammer of His Will, and through the fire of tribulation, upon the anvil of this travailing age, and in the particular shape His mind has envisioned, these scattered and mutually destructive fragments into which a perverse world has fallen, into one single unit, solid and indivisible, able to execute His design<sup>2</sup> for the children of men.

Ours rather the duty, however confused the scene, however dismal the present outlook, however circumscribed the resources we dispose of, to labor serenely, confidently and unremittingly to lend our share of assistance, in whichever way circumstances may enable us, to the operation of the forces which, as marshaled and directed by Bahá'u'lláh, are leading humanity out of the valley of misery and shame to the loftiest summits of power and glory.

SHOGHI

Haifa, Palestine  
March 28, 1941

1. The Bahai Faith.

2. The New World Order as predicted by Bahá'u'lláh.

# S U P P L E M E N T

"The time fore-ordained unto the peoples and kindreds of the earth is now come. The promises of God, as recorded in the Holy Scriptures, have all been fulfilled."

—BAHA'U'LLAH.

## THE GLORY OF GOD

"This Day is the Day of God, and God alone is speaking in it ; and none should be mentioned save Him."

"The beginning of all things is the knowledge of God, and the end of all things is strict observance of whatsoever hath been sent down from the empyrean of the Divine Will . . ."

—BAHA'U'LLAH.

"This priceless gem of Divine Revelation, now still in its embryonic state, shall evolve within the shell of His Law, and shall forge ahead, undivided and unimpaired, till it embraces the whole of mankind."—BAHA'U'LLAH.

# THE BAHĀ’I REVELATION

(THE GREATEST EVENT IN HUMAN HISTORY)

“This is a new cycle of human power.”—*Abdu'l-Baba.*

“The Promised One of all the peoples of the world hath appeared. All peoples and communities have been expecting a Revelation, and HE—BAHĀ’U’LLĀH—is the foremost teacher and educator of all mankind.”—*ABDU’L-BAHĀ.*

Beware of prejudice, light is good in whatsoever lamp it is burning. A rose is beautiful, in whatsoever garden it may bloom. A star has the same radiance whether it shines from the east or from the west.

—*Abdu'l-Baha.*

“We spend our lives trying to unlock the mystery of the universe, but there was a Turkish Prisoner, Baha'u'llah, in Akka, Palestine, who had the key!”—*Count Leo Tolstoy.*

“Associate with the followers of all religions with joy and kindness.”

“Should the lamp of Religion be hidden, chaos and confusion will ensue.”—*Baha'u'llah.*

# THE GREATEST EVENT IN HISTORY

If we study the story of the "ascent of man" as recorded in the pages of history, it becomes evident that the leading factor in human progress is the advent, from time to time, of men who pass beyond the accepted ideas of their day and become the discoverers and revealers of truths hitherto unknown among mankind. The inventor, the pioneer, the genius, the prophet—these are the men on whom the transformation of the world primarily depends.

In the history of science, of art, of music, we see abundant illustrations of this truth, but in no domain is the supreme importance of the great man and his message more clearly evident than in that of religion. All down the ages, whenever the spiritual life of men has become degenerate and their morals corrupt, that most wonderful and mysterious of men, the prophet, makes his appearance. Alone against the world, without a single human being capable of teaching, of guiding, of fully understanding him, or of sharing his responsibility, he arises, like a seer among blind men, to proclaim his gospel of righteousness and truth.

Amongst the prophets some stand out with special pre-eminence. Every few centuries a great Divine Revealer—a Krishna, a Zoroaster, a Moses, a Jesus, a Muhammad—appears in the East, like a spiritual Sun, to illumine the darkened minds of men and awaken their dormant souls. Whatever our views as to the relative greatness of these religion-founders, we must admit that they have been the most potent factors in the education of mankind. With one accord these prophets declare that the words they utter are not from themselves, but are a Revelation through them, a Divine message of which they are the bearers. Their recorded utterances abound, too, in hints and promises of a great world-teacher who will appear "in the fulness of time" to carry on their work and bring it to fruition, one who will establish a reign of peace and justice upon earth, and bring into one family all races, religions, nations and tribes, "that there may be one fold and One Shepherd" and that all may know and love God "from the least even unto the greatest."

Surely the advent of this "Educator of Mankind," in the latter days, when he appears, must be the greatest event in human history. *And the Baha'i Movement is proclaiming to the world the glad tidings that this Educator (Baha'u'llah) has in fact appeared, that His Revelation has been delivered and recorded and may be studied by every earnest seeker, that the "Day of the Lord" has already dawned and the "Sun of Righteousness" arisen.* As yet only a few on the mountain-tops have caught sight of the Glorious Orb, but already its rays are illumining heaven and earth, and ere long it will rise above the mountains and shine with full strength on the plains and valleys too, giving life and guidance to all.

Baha'u'llah declared, plainly and repeatedly, that He was the long-expected educator and teacher of all peoples, the channel of a wondrous Grace that would transcend all previous outpourings, in

which all previous forms of religion would become merged, as rivers merge in the ocean. He laid a foundation which affords a firm basis for Unity throughout the whole world and the inauguration of that glorious age of peace on earth, goodwill among men, of which prophets have told and poets sung.

Search after truth, the oneness of mankind, unity of religions, of races, of nations, of East and West, the reconciliation of religion and science, the eradication of prejudices and superstitions, the equality of men and women, the establishment of justice and righteousness, the setting up of a supreme international tribunal, the adoption of a universal auxiliary language, the compulsory diffusion of knowledge—these, and many other teachings like these, were revealed by the pen of Baha'u'llah seventy years ago, in innumerable books and epistles several of which were addressed to the Kings and Rulers of the world.

His message, unique in its comprehensiveness and scope, is wonderfully in accord with the signs and needs of the times. Never were the new problems confronting men so gigantic and complex as now. Never were the proposed solutions so numerous and conflicting. Never was the need of a great world teacher so urgent or so widely felt. Never, perhaps, was the expectancy of such a teacher so confident or so general.

#### PROOFS OF PROPHETHOOD.

Baha'u'llah asked no one to accept His statements and His tokens blindly. On the contrary, He put in the very forefront of His teachings emphatic warnings against blind acceptance of authority, and urged all to open their eyes and ears, and use their own judgment, independently and fearlessly, in order to ascertain the truth. He enjoined the fullest investigation and never concealed Himself, offering, as the supreme proofs of His prophethood, His words and works and their effects in transforming the lives and characters of men. The tests He proposed are the same as those laid down by His great predecessors.

Baha'u'llah has written much in explanation of the prophecies of old, but it is not on these that He depends for proof of His prophethood. The sun is its own proof, to all that have the power of perception. When it rises we need no ancient predictions to assure us of its shining. So with the Manifestation of God when He appears. Were all the former prophecies swept into oblivion, He would still be His own abundant and sufficient proof to all whose spiritual senses are open.

#### HIS MISSION.

Baha'u'llah's mission in the world is to bring about Unity—Unity of all mankind in and through God. He says :—

*“Of the Tree of Knowledge the All-glorious fruit is this exalted word : Of one Tree are all ye the fruits and of one Bough the leaves. Let not man glory in this that he loves his country, but let him rather glory in this that he loves his kind.”*

Previous prophets have heralded an age of peace on earth, goodwill among men, and have given their lives to hasten its advent,

but each and all of them have plainly declared that this blessed consummation would be reached only after the “Coming of the Lord” in the latter days, when the wicked would be judged and the righteous rewarded.

Zoroaster foretold three thousand years of conflict before the advent of Shah Bahram, the world-saviour, who would overcome Ahriman, the spirit of evil, and establish a reign of righteousness and peace.

Moses foretold a long period of exile, persecution and oppression for the children of Israel, before the Lord of Hosts would appear to gather them from all the nations, to destroy the oppressors and establish His Kingdom upon earth.

Christ said: “Think not that I am come to send peace upon earth: I came not to send peace but a sword” (Matt. x. 34), and he predicted a period of wars and rumours of wars, of tribulations and afflictions that would continue till the coming of the Son of Man “in the Glory of the Father.”

Muhammad declared that, because of their wrong-doings, Allah had put enmity and hatred among both Jews and Christians that would last until the Day of Resurrection, when He would appear to judge them all.

Baha'u'llah, on the other hand, announces that he is the Promised One of all these Prophets—the Divine Manifestation in whose era the reign of peace will actually be established. This statement is unprecedented and unique, yet it fits in wonderfully with the signs of the times, and with the prophecies of all the great prophets. Baha'u'llah revealed with incomparable clearness and comprehensiveness the means for bringing about peace and unity amongst mankind.

It is true that, since the advent of Baha'u'llah, there have been, until now, war and destruction on an unprecedented scale, but this is just what all the prophets have said would happen at the dawn of the “great and terrible Day of the Lord,” and is, therefore, but a confirmation of the view that the “Coming of the Lord” is not only at hand, but is already an accomplished fact.

According to the parable of Christ, the Lord of the Vineyard must miserably destroy the wicked husbandmen before He gives the Vineyard to others who will render Him the fruits in their seasons. Does not this mean that at the coming of the Lord dire destruction awaits those despotic governments, avaricious and intolerant priests, mullas, or tyrannical leaders who through the centuries have, like wicked husbandmen, misruled the earth and misappropriated its fruits?

There may be terrible events, and unparalleled calamities yet awhile on the earth, but Baha'u'llah assures us “that ere long, these fruitless strifes, these ruinous wars shall pass away and the Most Great Peace shall come.” War and strife have become so intolerable in their destructiveness that mankind must find deliverance from them or perish.

“The fulness of time” has come and with it the Promised Deliverer!

## WHAT THE BAHÁ'Í FAITH OFFERS

The Baha'i Faith offers to mankind the great glad-tidings that the glorious age of World Peace and unparalleled human advancement which has long been prophesied by all scriptures is now at hand. In its position as a new Revelation from God it asserts that mankind, after centuries of evolutionary progress under the guidance of successive Prophets, has arrived at the age of maturity. The present world-wide ordeal of suffering, it declares, is a purifying, transition experience, from which nations will arise to create together a fairer civilization than the world has yet known. This they will do in recognition of the divine law of human oneness, and in obedience to the concept of human brotherhood. World turmoil and agony is the signal of the death of an old era that has lost its spiritual power, and the birth of a Golden Age animated by the teachings of a new Prophet of God.

Baha'u'llah, the Founder of the Baha'i Faith, Who Himself lived in this world from 1817 to 1892, like all the Prophets of the past, gives to men a body of spiritual, humanitarian and social teachings designed to meet the needs of the new humanity. In essence His precepts and counsels are the same as the teachings of previous Prophets, arising as they do from the same Source of Divine Revelation. Like these preceding Prophets, including Moses, Zoroaster, Jesus, Buddha and Muhammad, each of Whom founded a brilliant civilization through the creative impulse breathed into human souls and the gift of a divine message brought to earth, Baha'u'llah, also as a Divine Educator, brings to mankind now struggling on the threshold of a world society, the Love and the Guidance it seeks. In His Spirit men will find unfailing power for the unfoldment of latent potentialities—spiritual, mental and physical—and in His Word divine direction for the establishment of an enduring commonwealth of nations which will give to all peoples, nations and classes the encouraging and assisting environment necessary for the growth and expression of sacred human capacities.

# A PATTERN FOR FUTURE SOCIETY

For those who have inclined to believe that even the realization of the mighty dream of the "return of Christ" would mean nothing more than the vindication of personal spirituality and individual righteousness, the idea of religion giving a law to the nation is the most revolutionary conception which can enter the mind of man. "For Baha'u'llah, we should readily recognize, has not only imbued mankind with a new and regenerating Spirit. He has not merely enunciated certain universal principles, or propounded a particular philosophy, however potent, sound and universal these may be. In addition to these He, as well as 'Abdu'l-Baha after Him, has, unlike the Dispensations of the past, clearly and specifically laid down a set of Laws, established definite institutions, and provided for the essentials of a Divine Economy. These are destined to be a pattern for future society, a supreme instrument for the establishment of the Most Great Peace, and the one agency for the unification of the world, and the proclamation of the reign of righteousness and justice upon the earth." . . . "Does not the very operation of the world-unifying forces that are at work in this age necessitate that He Who is the Bearer of the Message of God in this day should not only reaffirm that self-same exalted standard of individual conduct inculcated by the Prophets gone before Him, but embody in His appeal, to all governments and peoples, the essentials of that social code, that Divine Economy, which must guide humanity's concerted efforts in establishing that all-embracing federation which is to signalize the advent of the Kingdom of God on this earth?"

Such words as these, charged with the potency of a Faith that is not merely a written book but the very dynamic Spirit transforming the life of the entire world, make "The World Order of Baha'u'llah" a work of consummate importance to every sincere seeker and not to Baha'u'llah alone. In the light of the existing international chaos, they reveal the most significant Truth of this era, namely that the old conception of religion, which separated spirituality from the fundamental functions of civilization, compelling men to abide by conflicting principles of faith, of politics and of economics, has been forever destroyed. The command, "Render unto God that which is of God, and unto Caesar that which is of Caesar," has been annulled by the law of the oneness of humanity revealed by Baha'u'llah.

Leaders of religion, exponents of political theories, governors of human institutions, who at present are witnessing with perplexity and dismay the bankruptcy of their ideas, and the disintegration of their handiwork, would do well to turn their gaze to the Revelation of Baha'u'llah, and to meditate upon the World Order which, lying enshrined in His teachings, is slowly and imperceptibly rising amid the welter and chaos of present-day civilization. They need have no doubt or anxiety regarding the nature, the origin, or a validity of the institutions which the adherents of the Faith are building up throughout the world. For these lie imbedded in the teachings themselves, unadulterated and unobscured by unwarrantable inferences, or unauthorised interpretations of His Word.

## THE BAHAI' REVELATION

The Baha'i Revelation is the spirit of this age. It is the essence of all the highest ideals of this century. The Baha'i Cause is an inclusive movement; the teachings of all religions and societies are found here. Christians, Jews, Buddhists, Muhammadans, Zoroastrians, Theosophists, Freemasons, Spiritists, etc., find their highest aims in this Cause. Socialists and philosophers find their theories fully developed in this Revelation.

The Baha'i message is a call to religious unity and not an invitation to a new religion, not a new path to immortality, God forbid! It is the ancient path cleared of the debris of imaginations and superstitions of men, of the debris of strife and misunderstanding and is again made a clear path to the sincere seeker, that he may enter therein in assurance, and find that the Word of God is one Word, though the speakers were many.

This is a new cycle of human power. All the horizons of the world are luminous, and the world will become indeed as a garden and a paradise. It is the hour of unity of the sons of men and of the drawing together of all races and all classes.

The gift of God to this enlightened age is the knowledge of the oneness of mankind and the fundamental oneness of religion. War shall cease between nations, and by the Will of God the Most Great Peace shall come; the world will be seen as a new world, and all men will live as brothers.

# THE BAHÀ'Ì FAITH

(*A Summary of Its Aims, Teachings, History, etc.*)

## ITS AIMS AND PURPOSES.

The Revelation proclaimed by Baha'u'llah, . . . . . is divine in origin, all-embracing in scope, broad in its outlook, scientific in its method, humanitarian in its principles and dynamic in the influence it exerts on the hearts and minds of men. The mission of the Founder of their Faith . . . . is to proclaim that religious truth is not absolute but relative, that Divine Revelation is continuous and progressive, that the Founders of all past religions, though different in the non-essential aspects of their teachings, " abide in the same Tabernacle, soar in the same heaven, are seated upon the same throne, utter the same speech and proclaim the same Faith." His Cause . . . . stands identified with, and revolves around, the principle of the organic unity of mankind as representing the consummation of the whole process of human evolution. This final stage in this stupendous evolution . . . . is not only necessary but inevitable, that it is gradually approaching, and that nothing short of the celestial potency with which a divinely ordained Message can claim to be endowed can succeed in establishing it.

## ITS TEACHINGS.

The Baha'i Faith recognizes the unity of God and of His Prophets, upholds the principle of an unfettered search after truth, condemns all forms of superstition and prejudice, teaches that the fundamental purpose of religion is to promote concord and harmony, that it must go hand-in-hand with science, and that it constitutes the sole and ultimate basis of a peaceful, an ordered and progressive society. It inculcates the principle of equal opportunity, rights and privileges for both sexes, advocates compulsory education, abolishes extremes of poverty and wealth, exalts work performed in the spirit of service to the rank of worship, recommends the adoption of an auxiliary international language, and provides the necessary agencies for the establishment and safeguarding of a permanent and universal peace.

## ITS HISTORY AND GROWTH.

Born about the middle of the nineteenth century in darkest Persia, assailed from its infancy by the forces of religious fanaticism, the Faith has, notwithstanding the martyrdom of its Forerunner, the repeated banishments of its Founder, the almost life-long imprisonment of its chief Promoter and the cruel death of no less than twenty thousand of its devoted followers, succeeded in diffusing quietly and steadily its spirit throughout both the East and the West, has established itself in no fewer than forty countries of the world, and has recently obtained from the ecclesiastical and civil authorities in various lands written affirmations that recognize its independent religious status.

The Forerunner of the Faith was Mirza 'Ali-Muhammad of Shiraz, known as the Bab (The Gate) Who proclaimed on May 23, 1844, His twofold mission as an independent Manifestation of God and Herald of One greater than Himself, Who would inaugurate a new and unprecedented era in the religious history of mankind.

On His early life, His sufferings, the heroism of His disciples, and the circumstances of His tragic martyrdom need no details, as the record of His saintly life is minutely set forth in the Dawn-Breakers : Nabil's Narrative of the Early Days of the Baha'i Faith. Suffice it to say that at the early age of thirty-one the Bab was publicly martyred by a military firing squad at Tabriz, Persia, on July 9, 1850. On the evening of that same day His mangled body was removed from the courtyard of the barracks to the edge of the moat outside the gate of the city whence it was carried by His fervent disciples to Tihran. There it remained concealed until such time as its transfer to the Holy Land was made possible. Faced by almost insuperable difficulties and facing the gravest dangers a band of His disciples, acting under the instructions of 'Abdu'l-Baha succeeded in transporting overland the casket containing His remains to Haifa. In 1909, 'Abdu'l-Baha with his own hands and in the presence of the assembled representatives of various Baha'i communities deposited those remains within the vault of the Mausoleum he himself had erected for the Bab. Ever since that time countless followers of the Baha'i Faith have made the pilgrimage to this sacred spot, a spot which ever since 1921 has been further sanctified by the burial of 'Abdu'l-Baha in an adjoining vault.

The Founder of the Faith was Baha'u'llah (Glory of God), Whose advent the Bab had foretold. He declared His mission in 1863 while an exile in Baghdad. He subsequently formulated the principles

of that new and divine civilization which by His advent He claimed to have inaugurated. He too was bitterly opposed, was stripped of His property and rights, was exiled to 'Iraq, to Constantinople and Adrianople, and was eventually incarcerated in the penal colony of 'Akka where He passed away in 1892 in His seventy-fifth year. His remains are laid to rest in the Shrine at Bahji, north of 'Akka.

The authorized Interpreter and Exemplar of Baha'u'llah's teachings was His eldest son 'Abdu'l-Baha (Servant of Baha) who was appointed by his Father as the Center to whom all Baha'i's should turn for instruction and guidance. 'Abdu'l-Baha ever since his childhood was the closest companion of his Father, and shared all His sorrows and sufferings. He remained a prisoner until 1908, when the old regime in Turkey was overthrown and all religious and political prisoners throughout the empire were liberated. After that he continued to make his home in Palestine but undertook extensive teaching tours in Egypt, Europe and America, being ceaselessly engaged in explaining and exemplifying the principles of his Father's Faith and in inspiring and directing the activities of his friends and followers throughout the world. He passed away in 1921 in Haifa, Palestine, and, as already stated, was buried in a vault contiguous to that of the Bab on Mount Carmel.

According to the provisions of His Will, Shoghi Effendi, as His eldest grandson, has been appointed as First Guardian of the Baha'i Faith and Head of the Universal House of Justice which must, in conjunction with him, co-ordinate and direct the affairs of the various Baha'i communities in East and West in accordance with the principles enunciated by Baha'u'llah.

The period since 'Abdu'l-Baha's passing has been characterized by the formation and consolidation of the Local and National Assemblies, the bedrock on which the edifice of the Universal House of Justice is to be erected. There are, according to the latest reports from Tihran, over five hundred Local Assemblies already constituted in Persia. Organized Baha'i communities are to be found in every continent of the globe. National Assemblies have already been formed and are functioning in the United States and Canada, in India and Burma, in Great Britain, in Germany, 'Iraq and Egypt. Such Assemblies are in the process of formation in Persia, Caucasus, Turkestan and Australia. Local Assemblies and groups have been already established in France, Switzerland and Italy, in the Scandinavian countries, in Austria and the Balkans, in Turkey, Syria, Albania, Abyssinia, China, Japan, Brazil and South Africa. Christians of

various denominations, Muslims of both the Sunni and Shi'ih sects of Islam, Jews, Hindus, Sikhs, Zoroastrians and Buddhists, have eagerly embraced its truth, have recognized the divine origin and fundamental unity underlying the teachings of all the Founders of past religions, and have unreservedly identified themselves with both the spirit and form of its evolving institutions. All these centers function as the component parts of a single organism, of an entity the spiritual and administrative center of which lies enshrined in the twin cities of 'Akka and Haifa.

#### ITS ADMINISTRATIVE ORDER.

The essential basis of the religions established by the Prophets is one, but the Faith of Baha'u'llah, unlike former religions, raises upon the foundation of love and sacrifice the structure of a spiritual community which reflects the true purpose of faith and prevents the Baha'i teachings becoming altered and perverted by the rise of a creed and the organization of a church.

There is no professional clergy in the Cause of Baha'u'llah. The Baha'is have been given an administrative order which enables them to maintain unity of belief and action in service to the supreme end, the unity of mankind.

By this administrative order, control is exercised upon the admission of members into the Baha'i community, upon the quality of literature prepared to promote publicly the ideals of the Faith and upon the accuracy of all public Baha'i teaching. Since the Baha'i holy scriptures are available in written form and are not a mere oral tradition, the believers possess a standard of truth preserving the Cause from irresponsible interpretation.

The local community on April 21 of each year elects by universal adult suffrage an administrative body of nine members called the Spiritual Assembly. This body, with reference to all Baha'i matters, has sole power of decision. It represents the collective conscience of the community with respect to Baha'i activities. Its capacity and power are supreme within certain definite limitations.

The various local communities unite through delegates elected annually according to the principle of proportionate representation in the formation of a National Spiritual Assembly for their country or natural geographical area. This National Spiritual Assembly, likewise composed of nine members, administers all national Baha'i affairs and may assume jurisdiction of any local matter felt to be of

more than local importance. Spiritual Assemblies, local and national, combine an executive, a legislative and a judicial function, all within the limits set by the Baha'i teachings. They have no resemblance to religious bodies which can adopt articles of faith and regulate the processes of belief and worship. They are primarily responsible for the maintenance of unity within the Baha'i community and for the release of its collective power in service to the cause. Membership in the Baha'i community is granted, on personal declaration of faith, to adult men and women.

Eleven National Spiritual Assemblies have come into existence since the passing of 'Abdu'l-Baha in 1921. Each National Spiritual Assembly will, in future, constitute an electoral body in the formation of an International Spiritual Assembly, a consummation which will perfect the administrative order of the faith and create, for the first time in history, an international tribunal representing a worldwide community united in a single faith.

In the United States and Canada there are at present a large number of local Spiritual Assemblies, and good many more local groups. The property held in trust for the American Baha'is, consisting of books and other publications, the Baha'i House of Worship at Wilmette, Illinois, near Chicago, and large holdings of land and buildings at Green Acre, Eliot, Maine, represents a total value of more than one million dollars. The American National Spiritual Assembly has been a legally incorporated body since 1927.

## WHAT HAS IT ACCOMPLISHED ?

Persia, at the time when the Báb and Bahá'u'lláh started teaching, was in a state of the greatest decadence. Religious bigotry and fanaticism were extreme. The government was weak and corrupt. Persecution was rife. Western science and art were regarded as unclean. Women were kept in ignorance and seclusion. The Bábís and Bahá'ís were at first bitterly opposed and tormented. Some 20,000 perished as martyrs and a great many were imprisoned, scourged, robbed of their possessions, exiled and otherwise ill-treated. Coming from different religions and sects that hated and despised each other, they joined in a great brotherhood, ready to give their lives for each other, or even for their persecutors. They are giving up their old prejudices, are establishing schools in every town and village, educating their girls, becoming enlightened, tolerant and progressive. With

regard to the number of followers of the Movement in Persia, Lord Curzon of Kedleston in his book, "Persia," written in 1892, states: "The lowest estimate places the present number at half a million. I am disposed to think from conversations with persons well qualified to judge, that the total is nearer one million." In Russia, America, India, Burma and Germany, Bahá'ís are already to be numbered by the thousand, while centres are rapidly being established in several European countries, in China, Japan, Australia, New Zealand, South Africa, the Islands of the Pacific Ocean and other regions of the globe.

Christians, Jews, Muslims, Zoroastrians, Hindus, people of every religion, and people of no religion, are joining this brotherhood in large numbers, dropping their age-long prejudices and animosities in order to unite in working for the promised coming of God's Kingdom upon earth.

The Bahá'í Movement has shown its power to change men's hearts and lives, making them new creatures. It has provided a basis on which people of all religions, races, nations and classes may unite, and are uniting, into one great harmonious family. It has revealed the means by which can be built up a new civilization in which co-operation shall replace competition, amity take the place of enmity, and devotion to God's Will be substituted for selfish and worldly desires.

## WHAT IS ITS RELATION TO CHRISTIANITY AND THE OTHER GREAT RELIGIONS OF THE WORLD?

The same relation as the fruit has to the flower and the bud—it is their development and fulfilment. Bahá'u'lláh teaches that all the great religions are parts of one Divine Plan for the education and salvation of mankind. All the great prophets and religion-founders have taught one and the same religion, which consists in the worship and service of the One and Only God, but each has presented the teaching in the form best adapted for the age and the people to whom he came. There was never want of harmony between the prophets. It is their blind followers who have fallen into quarrels and disagreements. Now, through the work of Christ and all the Holy Prophets, man has reached a stage of development at which he is ready for a Universal Teaching, which shall consummate all previous Revelations and reconcile all the different sects and denominations into which humanity has become split up. This New Revelation will inaugurate that age of "peace on earth, goodwill towards

men," whose coming has been foretold in the Holy Books of all religions.

Through railways and steamships, postal system and press, telegraph and telephone, aeroplanes and wireless, the mechanical means have been provided for the unification of humanity. Through the invention of Esperanto, an easy and adequate language, medium has been provided for the communication of ideas between the people of all countries. But these things cannot of themselves bring about Unity. The change of heart is needed, which only true religion freed from man-made and erroneous accretions, can accomplish.

A new era in religion is always initiated by a Prophet or Mediator, who is the bearer of the New Divine Message to His fellowmen. Bahá'u'lláh comes as the Prophet of the New Era on which humanity is now entering. As such he is not a rival, much less is he an enemy, to Christ or any previous Divine Messenger or Manifestation. On the contrary, he fulfils their promises and consummates their work.

#### ITS WORLD-WIDE SPIRITUAL COMMUNITY.

*"The Tabernacle of Unity has been raised; regard ye not one another in strength. . . Of one tree are ye all the fruit and of one bough the leaves. . . The world is but one country and mankind its citizens."*—BAHÁ'U'LLÁH.

Upon the spiritual foundation established by Bahá'u'lláh during the forty year period of His Mission (1853-1892), there stands to-day an independent religion represented by nearly eight hundred local communities of believers. These communities geographically are spread throughout all five continents. In point of race, class, nationality and religious origin, the followers of Bahá'u'lláh exemplify well-nigh the whole diversity of the modern world. They may be characterized as a true cross-section of humanity, a microcosm which, for all its relative littleness, carries within it individual men and women typifying the macrocosm of mankind.

None of the historic causes of association served to create this world-wide spiritual community. Neither a common language, a common blood, a common civil government, a common tradition nor a mutual grievance acted upon Bahá'is to supply a fixed centre of interest, or a goal of material advantage. On the contrary, membership in the Bahá'i community in the land of its birth even to this day has been a severe disability, and outside of Iran the motive animating believers has been in direct opposition to the most

inveterate prejudices of their environment. The Cause of Baha'u'llah has moved forward without the reinforcement of wealth, social prestige or other means of public influence.

Every local Baha'i community exists by the voluntary association of individuals who consciously overcome the fundamental sanctions evolved throughout the centuries to justify the separations and antagonisms of human society. In America, this association means that white believers accept the spiritual equality of their Negro fellows. In Europe, it means the reconciliation of Protestant and Catholic upon the basis of a new and larger faith. In the Orient, Christian, Jewish and Muhammadan believers must stand apart from the rigid exclusiveness into which each was born.

The central fact to be noted concerning the nature of the Baha'i Faith is that it contains a power, fulfilled in the realm of conscience, which can reverse the principal momentum of modern civilization—the drive toward division and strife—and initiate its own momentum moving steadily in the direction of unity and accord. It is in this power, and not in any criterion upheld by the world, that the Faith of Baha'u'llah has special significance.

#### ITS RENEWAL OF FAITH.

*“Therefore the Lord of Mankind has caused His holy, divine Manifestations to come into the world. He has revealed His heavenly books in order to establish spiritual brotherhood, and through the power of the Holy Spirit has made it possible for perfect fraternity to be realized among mankind.”*—ABDU'L-BAHA.

In stating that the Cause of Baha'u'llah is an independent religion, two essential facts are implied.

The first fact is that the Baha'i Cause historically was not an offshoot of any prior social principle or community. The teachings of Baha'u'llah are no artificial synthesis assembled from the modern library of international truth, which might be duplicated from the same sources. Baha'u'llah created a reality in the world of the soul which never before existed and could not exist apart from Him.

The second fact is that the Faith of Baha'u'llah is a religion, standing in the line of true religions: Christianity, Muhammadanism, Judaism and other prophetic Faiths. Its existence, like that of early Christianity, marks the return of faith as a direct and personal experience of the will of God. Because the divine will itself has been revealed in terms of human reality, the followers of Baha'u'llah are confident that their personal limitations can be transformed by an inflow of spiritual reinforcement from the higher world. It is for

the privilege of access to the source of reality that they forego reliance upon the darkened self within and the unbelieving society without.

The religious education of Baha'i's revolutionizes their inherited attitude toward their own as well as other traditional religions.

To Baha'i's, religion is the life and teachings of the prophet. By identifying religion with its founder, they exclude from its spiritual reality all those accretions of human definition, ceremony and ritualistic practice emanating from followers required from time to time to make compromise with an unbelieving world. Furthermore, in limiting religion to the prophet they are able to perceive the oneness of God in the spiritual oneness of all the prophets. The Baha'i born into Christianity can whole-heartedly enter into fellowship with the Baha'i born into Muhammadanism because both have come to understand that Christ and Muhammad reflected the light of the one God into the darkness of the world. If certain teachings of Christ differ from certain teachings of Moses or Muhammad, the Baha'i know that all prophetic teachings are divided into two parts: one, consisting of the essential and unalterable principles of love, peace, unity and co-operation, renewed as divine commands in every cycle; the other, consisting of external practices (such as diet, marriage and similar ordinances) conforming to the requirements of one time and place.

This Baha'i teaching leads to a profounder analysis of the process of history. The followers of Baha'u'llah derive mental integrity from the realization made so clear and vivid by 'Abdul'l-Baha' that true insight into history discloses the uninterrupted and irresistible working of a Providence not denied nor made vain by any measure of human ignorance and unfaith.

According to this insight, a cycle begins with the appearance of a prophet or manifestation of God, through whom the spirits of men are revivified and reborn. The rise of faith in God produces a religious community, whose power of enthusiasm and devotion releases the creative elements of a new and higher civilization. This civilization comes to its fruitful autumn in culture and mental achievement, to give way eventually to a barren winter of atheism, when strife and discord bring the civilization to an end. Under the burden of immorality, dishonour and cruelty marking this phase of the cycle, humanity lies helpless until the spiritual leader, the prophet, once more returns in the power of the Holy Spirit.

Such is the Baha'i reading of the book of the past. Its reading of the present interprets these world troubles, this general chaos and confusion, as the hour when the renewal of religion is no longer a racial experience, a rebirth of one limited area of human society, but the destined unification of humanity itself in one faith and one order. A human society which has substituted creeds for religion and armies for truth, even as all ancient prophets foretold, must needs come to abandon its instruments of violence and undergo purification until conscious, humble faith can be reborn.

## NINE QUALIFICATIONS BY WHICH THE GREAT MASTER MAY BE RECOGNISED

1. That the Great Master should be the educator of the world of humanity.
2. His teachings should be universal and confer illumination upon mankind.
3. His knowledge should be innate and spontaneous, not acquired.
4. He should answer the questions of all sages, solve the difficult problems of humanity, and be able to withstand all the persecutions and sufferings heaped upon him.
5. He should be a joy-bringer and the herald of the kingdom of happiness.
6. His knowledge should be infinite and his wisdom all-comprehensive.
7. The penetration of his Word and the potency of his influence should be so great as to humble his worst enemies.
8. Sorrows and tribulations must not vex him. His courage and conviction must be Godlike. Day unto day he must become firmer and more zealous.
9. He should be the establisher of universal civilization, the unifier of religion, the standard-bearer of universal peace, and the embodiment of all the highest and noblest virtues of the world of humanity.

Whenever you find these conditions realized in a human temple,—to *Him* look for guidance and illumination.—‘Abdu’l-Baha.

## THE BAHÁ'Í CAUSE AND UNIVERSAL PEACE

The secret of universal peace has not only been found but made to work in actual practice, throughout a rapidly growing spiritual community with established centers in every part of the world. The universal peace obtaining among the Bahá'ís of the Orient, Europe and America, establishes the perfect model by which the various nations and peoples can raise the true world peace on enduring foundations. In the application of the principles enunciated by Bahá'u'llah, world peace is reinforced by spiritual truths and given religious sanction without disregarding the part that must be played by political and economic considerations.

The Bahá'í Cause, in fact, made the question of peace the supreme issue more than ninety years ago, before the subject had been seriously considered by existing rulers and churches. In a series of letters addressed to kings and heads of government in Europe, Asia and the United States, written in 1869 Bahá'u'llah proclaimed that the era of international order had dawned, and called upon the reigning rulers to assemble and take steps to eliminate the possibilities of future war. He expressed the profound truth that service to the ideal of peace was not merely an attitude of political wisdom, but obedience to God, and continued irresponsibility and unfaithfulness to the right of the peoples to live in peace would produce international strife and anarchy so widespread that every reactionary regime would be destroyed.

Following in the footsteps of Bahá'u'llah, his son 'Abdu'l-Bahá, Exemplar of the new Faith, consecrated his life to the ideal of unity, and from 1911 to 1913, on the eve of the great war, travelled throughout Europe and America in order to bring the principles of peace directly to the people. Speaking at California, in 1912, 'Abdu'l-Bahá, definitely predicted the outbreak of international conflict in the imminent future, calling upon the American people to arise as pioneers of universal peace.

In the Bahá'í teachings, universal peace is far more than mere absence of military conflict. It embodies also peace between the religions, peace between the races and peace between the classes of mankind. Universal peace, can only come into being as the roots of all antagonism, prejudice, strife and competition are removed from the hearts of men, and this transformation of attitude and action in turn depends upon devotion to the Divine Will. The development of believers in so many parts of the world, who accept the equality

and fundamental unity of all religions and races, stands as the most vital proof that the spirit of religion has been renewed in this age.

But the Baha'i Cause represents far more than merely a new attitude of friendliness and amity among groups of people ; it is pointed out by students of the teachings that Baha'u'llah also created an organic and structural unity capable of relating the religious and humanitarian activities of Baha'i's throughout the world. The Baha'i Cause is to-day functioning as a body in accordance with this organic unity, which co-ordinates local, national and international units in one harmonious whole. Stressing above all the spiritual character of this Cause, and its rigid and uncompromising insistence upon loyalty of all believers to their own government, the Baha'i Cause at the same time provides order and purpose for that sphere of effort and action wherein all individuals are left legitimately free to co-operate with others for spiritual and ideal ends. A movement which can thus unify Christians, Muhammadans, Jews, Zoroastrians and other religionists—which in its own membership can subdue racial and class prejudice, and applies the principles of democracy to the election of local, national and international assemblies—is, a true application of the ideal of universal peace meriting the study of all who realise that peace cannot be attained merely by treaty and pact between armed governments all subject to conflicting influences from their own citizens. The "moral equivalent" of a true League of Nations and a World Court has been created by the power of love manifest in Baha'u'llah and made evident in teachings accepted as prophetic by His followers in all lands.

The warning uttered by 'Abdu'l-Baha at Haifa in 1921, His last year on earth, was that class dissension would continue to develop in all countries, and become a sinister menace to civilisation, until the nations sincerely sought to establish universal peace. The Baha'i peace programme was defined by 'Abdu'l-Baha in a letter written to the members of the Central Organisation for a Durable Peace, The Hague, in 1919. Many years earlier He wrote the following significant words :

" True civilisation will unfurl its banner in the midmost heart of the world whenever a certain number of distinguished Sovereigns of lofty aims—the shining exemplars of devotion and determination—shall, for the good and happiness of all mankind, arise with a firm resolve and clear vision to establish the cause of Universal Peace. They must make the cause of Peace the object of universal consultation, and seek by every means in their power to convene a conference of the governments of the world. They must conclude a firm treaty, and

establish a Covenant the provisions of which shall be sound, clear and definite. They must promulgate it to the world, and cause it to be ratified by the unanimous decision of the whole human race.

“ This great and noble undertaking—the real source of the tranquillity of all the world—should be regarded as sacred by all who dwell on earth. All peoples and nations should bend their efforts to insure the stability and permanence of this supreme Covenant. In this universal treaty the limits and frontiers of all nations should be definitely fixed, the principles underlying the relations of governments expressly stated, and all inter-governmental agreements, relationships and obligations ascertained and clearly set forth.

“ In like manner, the size of the armaments of every government should be strictly limited, for if the preparation for war and the fighting forces of any government advance and increase, the suspicions of other governments will be aroused. The fundamental principle underlying this solemn Agreement should be so fixed that if one of the governments of the world should later violate any one of its provisions, all the governments on earth would arise to reduce it to utter submission, nay the human race as a whole should resolve with every power at its disposal to destroy that government. Should this greatest of all remedies be applied to the sick body of the world, humanity will assuredly recover from its ill and will remain safe and secure for all time . . .

“ A few, unaware how much man can do if he will but try, regard this matter as really impracticable, and even beyond the range of human ability. Such is not the case, however. On the contrary, thanks to the unfailing grace of the Lord, to the loving-kindness of the favoured of God, to the extraordinary endeavours of wise and capable souls, and to the thoughts and ideas of the peerless leaders of the times, nothing whatsoever can be regarded as unattainable. Nothing short of the highest endeavour and the firmest determination can possibly achieve this end. Many a cause, which past ages have regarded as a mere dream and fiction of the fancy, has proved in these days to be practicable and easy of achievement. How then can this most great and lofty cause—the day-star in the firmament of true civilization and the cause of the glory, the advancement, the well-being and the success of all humanity—be regarded as an impossibility? Of a surety, the day will come when its beauteous light shall illuminate the assemblage of man.”

# CAN STATESMEN AND ECONOMISTS REBUILD THE WORLD?

Humanity, whether viewed in the light of man's individual conduct or in the existing relationships between organized communities and nations has, alas, strayed too far, and suffered too great a decline to be redeemed through the unaided efforts of the best among its recognized rulers and statesmen—however disinterested their motives, however concerted their action, however unsparing in their zeal and devotion to its cause. No scheme which the calculations of the highest statesmanship may yet devise; no doctrine which the most distinguished exponents of economic theory may hope to advance; no principle which the most ardent of moralists may strive to inculcate, can provide, in the last resort, adequate foundations upon which the future of a distracted world can be built.

No appeal for mutual tolerance, which the worldly-wise might raise, however compelling and insistent, can calm its passions or help to restore its vigour. Nor would any general scheme of mere organized international co-operation, in whatever sphere of human activity, however ingenuous in conception, or extensive in scope, succeed in removing the root cause of the evil that has so rudely upset the equilibrium of present-day society. Not even, I venture to assert would the very act of devising the machinery required for the political and economic unification of the world—a principle that has been increasingly advocated in recent times—provide in itself the antidote against the poison that is steadily undermining the vigour of organized peoples and nations.

What else, might we not confidently affirm, but the unreserved acceptance of the Divine Program enunciated, with such simplicity and force as far back as 70 years ago, by Baha'u'llah, embodying in its essentials God's divinely appointed scheme for the unification of mankind in this age, coupled with an indomitable conviction in the unfailing efficacy of each and all of its provisions, is eventually capable of withstanding the forces of internal disintegration which, if unchecked, must needs continue to eat into the vitals of a despairing society. It is towards this goal—the goal of a new World Order, Divine in origin, all-embracing in scope, equitable in principle, challenging in its features—that a harassed humanity must strive.

# A WARNING AND A PROMISE

The proclamation of the Oneness of Mankind,—the head cornerstone of Baha'u'llah's all-embracing dominion,—can under no circumstances be compared with such expressions of pious hope as have been uttered in the past. His is not merely a call which He raised alone and unaided, in the face of the relentless and combined opposition of two of the most powerful Oriental potentates of His day—while Himself an exile and prisoner in their hands. It implies at once a warning and a promise—a warning that in it lies the sole means for the salvation of a great suffering world, a promise that its realization is at hand.

Uttered at a time when its possibility had not yet been seriously envisaged in any part of the world, it has, by virtue of that celestial potency with which the Spirit of Baha'u'llah has breathed into it, come at last to be regarded, by an increasing number of thoughtful men, not only as an approaching possibility, but as the necessary outcome of the forces now operating in the world.

## WHAT IS PROMISED FOR THIS CENTURY?

The century has come when all the nations are to be unified.

The century has come when all the nations shall enjoy international peace.

The century has come when all the races and tribes of the world shall do away with racial prejudice and associate fully.

The century has come when all the nativities of the world shall prove to be one home of the human family. Thus may humankind, in its entirety, rest comfortably and in peace under the great and broad tabernacle of the one Lord.

Religious and sectarian antagonism, the hostility of races and peoples, and differences among nations will be eliminated.

# THEY SANG & DANCED THEIR WAY TO DEATH

---

## THIS IS NO FICTION

In an age steeped in skepticism and unbelief, in a country reckoned to be one of the most corrupt regions within the pale of civilization, yea, in such a country and in such an age, stepped forth MEN, WOMEN and CHILDREN,—not ten in number, not ten thousand, but in their tens of thousands—flinging away their possessions, their life, their all, with such ecstasy, such exultation that the whole world marvelled at the manner of their sacrifice. Lord Curzon, for instance, writing of them, declares:—“Of no small account, then, must be the tenets of a creed, that can awaken in its followers so rare and beautiful a spirit of self-sacrifice.” They exhibited, affirms Prof. E. G. Browne of Cambridge University, “a degree of devotion, disinterestedness, generosity, unselfishness, nobility and courage which may be paralleled in history, but can scarcely be surpassed.” What had they found, these men and women and children—rich and poor, cultured and illiterate, alike,—that they counted the giving of their very life for it a joy? \*

\* Read the answer in *THE DAWN-BREAKERS*, the soul-thrilling narrative by Nabil of the greatest drama in the world's spiritual history. Rendered into exquisite English by Shoghi Effendi. Richly illustrated.

# REFERENCES TO THE BAHÁ'Í FAITH

Carlton Hotel,  
London S.W. 1.

Bahá'ís insist on points which constitute the essentials of the several creeds and faiths which have divided and still divide the human family. It seeks thereby to establish human unity. It inculcates pursuit of truth through the miasma of superstitions old and new. These features ought to secure for Bahá'ís an enduring place in the religions of the World. It is one of the noblest contributions which Asia has made to human civilization. The history of its martyrdom in Teheran is a glorious chapter, indicating how much suffering the awakened human spirit can endure for the sake of its convictions. In the World as one sees it today, divided and torn asunder by warring ambitions, Bahá'ism has undoubtedly a great part to play.

(Sd.) M. R. JAYAKAR.

*Vice-Chancellor's Lodge,  
Benares Hindu University.*

The Bahá'í Movement is a sign of the times. There is an increasing eagerness on the part of thoughtful men and women in all religions to find out the religion behind all religions, which requires us to believe in the unseen and work for human fellowship. This is the fundamental truth and all the rest is a matter of opinion. The Bahá'í Movement is in keeping with the past spiritual tradition of India and I therefore welcome it and wish it well.

(Sd.) S. RADHAKRISHAN.

Bahá'ism is not so much a new gospel as a restatement of the old gospel with an eloquent exhortation to right action in consonance with the beautiful creed. The freshness of the expression of the old doctrines of truth, love, peace, equality and brotherhood not only captivate the heart but enchant the soul. The emphasis on action in harmony with theory is an even more ennobling part of the Bahá'í Faith. The Bahá'í meets every man as man and no less. That is saying a great deal when egotism in the individual and the narrow nationalism among groups are the besetting sins of our times. The claim of the Bahá'í to the everlasting gratitude of mankind is based not merely on the simplicity and the beauty of his creed but it is consecrated by the blood of thirty thousand of their comrades in faith who were butchered and tortured to death under every revolting species of cruelty and barbarism but who never denied their faith till the last breath of their lives. The appeal of Bahá'ism is not narrow or for a particular time or place. It is human, catholic and universal.

(Sd.) JAMNADAS MEHTA.

BOMBAY, 6th February 1941.

Fairfield,  
Ferozepore Road,  
LAHORE, 2nd May 1940.

I have studied the Baha'i Movement and have more than once presided over lectures delivered by the protagonists of this movement. It lays stress on universal brotherhood and on the essentials of religions. In the history of Islam, sufi-ism also advocated the humanitarian aspect of ethics, in addition to mysticism which was its main feature. The founder of the Baha'i Faith whilst giving sufficient scope to the mystic part of sufi-ism, lays stress on the unity of God, teaching what in the terms of Christian theology may be described as the Fatherhood of God and Brotherhood of man.

In these days when the opposite tendencies of human nature have, owing to a combination of historical circumstances, come to the front, Baha'i ethical teaching is the greatest need of which men should take cognizance. In India, we find leaders who think that Islam teaches only militancy and separatism. They should take a leaf out of Baha'i work.

(Sd.) NARINDARANATH,  
RAJA.

The founder of the Baha'i faith is undoubtedly one of the great Seers of the Modern Age. The Gospel that he enunciated and the programme that he enjoined upon his followers are singularly like the prophecy of the ideal and dream that inspire the heart of Youth with quest for a brave new World built upon equity, fellowship and peace.

In the midst of all the tragic horror of hate and bloodshed that surround us today, His Message to humanity does indeed fulfil the Meaning of His name and earns the Glory of God.

MRS. SAROJINI NAIDU.

HYDERABAD, D.N.  
15th February 1941.

PROF. BENOY KUMAR SARKAR, M.A., Ph.D.

For over a quarter of a century, since my American days, I have been under the conviction that the Baha'i Movement serves to expand the intellectual and moral personality of every individual that comes into contact with it. The movement has set in motion some of those currents of thought and work which lead to the silent but effective conversion of men and women to humaner and world embracing principles of daily conduct. Because of these creative forces in the social domain the Baha'i Movement is to be appreciated as one of the profoundest emancipators of mankind from the tradition of race —chauvinism and ethno-religious bigotry.

## BABU BHAGVANDAS OF BENARES.

....The ideals of universal brotherhood and oneness of mankind, equality, love, work for all, abolition of poverty, disarmament, peace on earth and goodwill among men, abolition of meaningless superstitions, promotion of general welfare, emancipation and education of women, devotion unto death to great ideals, suffering but not doing wrong, eradication of all separative and antagonising religions, political, and other biases, also a universal language and a universal religion—all these ideals have been placed before humanity, from time to time, by the supreme spirit, through saints, sages, seers, of many degrees. The Baha'i Movement has put new life into those ideals and presented them freshly to mankind, and it should therefore be welcomed and helped in every way possible, most gladly and willingly.....

## LATE DOWAGER QUEEN MARIE OF RUMANIA.

"It is a wondrous Message that Baha'u'llah and his son 'Abdu'l-Baha have given us. They have not set it up aggressively knowing that the germ of eternal truth which lies at its core cannot but take root and spread". . . . .

"If ever the name of Baha'u'llah or 'Abdu'l-Baha comes to your attention, do not put their writings from you. Search out their Books, and let their glorious, peace-bringing, love-creating words and lessons sink into your hearts as they have into mine."

"It is like a wide embrace gathering together all those who have long searched for words of hope. It accepts all great prophets gone before, it destroys no other creeds and leaves all doors open."

"Saddened by the continual strife amongst believers of many confessions and wearied of their intolerance towards each other, I discovered in the Baha'i teaching the real spirit of Christ so often denied and misunderstood: Unity instead of strife, hope instead of condemnation, love instead of hate, and a great reassurance for all men."

## FORMER PRESIDENT MASARYK OF CZECHOSLOVAKIA.

Continue to do what you are doing, spread these principles of humanity and do not wait for the diplomats. Diplomats alone cannot bring the peace, but it is a great thing that official people begin to speak about these universal peace principles. Take these principles to the diplomats, to the universities and colleges and other schools, and also write about them. It is the people who will bring the universal peace.

## ARTHUR HENDERSON.

I have read the pamphlet on the "New World Order" by Shoghi Effendi. It is an eloquent expression of the doctrines which

I have always associated with the Baha'i Movement and I would like to express my great sympathy with the aspirations towards world unity which underlies his teaching.

PROF. VAMBERY (in his letter to Abdul Baha, the son of Baha'u'llah) . . . O thou noble friend who are conferring guidance upon humanity—May my life be a ransom to thee. . . . I discovered that the devotees of these various religions have become the instruments of tyranny and oppression in the hands of rulers and governors, and that they are the causes of the destruction of the world of humanity. Considering those evil results, every person is forced by necessity to enlist himself on the side of your excellency, and accept with joy the prospect of a fundamental basis for a universal religion of God, being laid through your efforts."

THE RT. HON. SIR HERBERT SAMUEL, G.C.B., M.P. :

"It is possible indeed to pick out points of fundamental agreement among all creeds. That is the essential purpose of the Baha'i Religion. The foundation and growth of which is one of the most striking movements that have proceeded from the East in recent years."

COUNT LEO TOLSTOY :

"We spend our lives trying to unlock the mystery of the universe, but there was a Turkish Prisoner, Baha'u'llah, in Akka, Palestine, who had the key!"

PROF. HERBERT A. MILLER :

"The central drive of the Baha'i Movement is for human unity. It would secure this through unprejudiced search for truth, making religion conform to scientific discovery and insisting that fundamentally all religions are alike. For the coming of universal peace, there is great foresight and wisdom as to details. Among other things there should be a universal language. . . . No other religious movement has put so much emphasis on the emancipation and education of women. Everyone should work whether rich or poor, and poverty should be abolished. . . . What will be the course of the Baha'i Movement no one can prophecy, but I think it is no exaggeration to claim that the programme is the finest fruit of the religious contribution of Asia."

THE RT. HON. THE EARL CURZON :

"If one conclusion more than another has been forced upon our notice by the retrospect in which I have indulged, it is that a sublime and unmurmuring devotion has been inculcated by this new faith, whatever it be. Tales of magnificent heroism illumine the blood-stained pages of Baha'i history. . . . and fires of

smithfield did not kindle a nobler courage than has met and defied the more refined torture-mongers of Tehran. Of no small account then must be the tenets of a creed that can awaken in its followers so rare and beautiful a spirit of self-sacrifice.”

#### SIR FRANCIS YOUNGHUSBAND :

“ For many years I have been interested in the rise and progress of the Baha'i Movement. Its roots go deep down into the past and yet it looks forward into the future. It realizes and preaches the oneness of mankind. And I have noticed how ardently its followers work for the furtherance of peace and for the general welfare of mankind. God must be with them and their success therefore assured.”

#### REV. J. TYSSUL DAVIS, B.A. :

“ The Baha'i religion has made its way... because it meets the needs of its day. It fits the larger outlook of our time better than the rigid exclusive older faiths. A characteristic is its unexpected liberality and toleration... Their ethical ideal is very high and is of the type we Westerners have learnt to designate ‘Christlike’. ‘By their fruits shall ye know them’! We cannot but address to this youthful religion an All Hail! of welcome.”

#### PROF. JAMES DARMESTETER :

“ ... The morality it inculcates is a revolution. It has the ethics of the west. It suppresses lawful impurities which are a great barrier dividing Islam from Christiandom. It denounces polygamy, the fruitful source of Oriental degeneration. It seeks to reconstitute the family and it elevates man, and in elevating him exalts woman up to his level. Baha'ism which diffused itself in less than five years from one end of Persia to another, which was bathed in 1852 in the blood of its martyrs, has been silently progressing and propagating itself. If Persia is to be at all regenerate it will be through this new faith.”

#### PRESIDENT EDUARD BENES :

“ I have followed it (the Baha'i Cause) with deep interest ever since my trip to London to the First Races Congress in July 1911, when I heard for the first time of the Baha'i Movement and its summary of the principles for peace. I followed it during the war and after the war. The Baha'i Teaching is one of the spiritual forces now absolutely necessary to put the spirit first in this battle against material forces. . . . The Baha'i Teaching is one of the great instruments for the final victory of the spirit and of humanity.

# BAHA'I LITERATURE

## WRITINGS OF BAHĀ'U'LĀH.

Kitab-i-Iqan (Book of Certitude)—Translated by Shoghi Effendi.  
Hidden Words—Translated by Shoghi Effendi.

The Seven Valleys and The Four Valleys.

Gleanings from the Writings of Baha'u'llah.

Tablets of Baha'u'llah.

Epistle to the Son of the Wolf—Translated by Julie Chanler from the French version of M. Hippolyte Dreyfus.

## WRITINGS OF 'ABDU'L-BAHA.

Some Answered Questions—Edited by Laura Clifford Barney.

Promulgation of Universal Peace—Edited by Howard MacNutt.

Tablets of 'Abdu'l-Baha—Edited by Albert Windust.

Mysterious Forces of Civilization.

The Baha'i Peace Program.

The Wisdom of 'Abdu'l-Baha—Edited by Lady Blomfield.

'Abdu'l-Baha in New York.

America's Spiritual Mission.

The Foundations of World Unity.

The Reality of Man.

Will and Testament of 'Abdu'l-Baha.

## WORKS COMPILED FROM WRITINGS OF BAHĀ'U'LĀH AND 'ABDU'L-BAHA.

Baha'i Scriptures—Edited by Horace Holley.

Baha'i Prayers.

The Oneness of Mankind—Compiled by Louis Gregory.

The Garden of the Heart—Compiled by Frances Esty.

Life Eternal—Compiled by Mary Rumsey Movius.

## WRITINGS OF SHOGHI EFFENDI.

Baha'i Administration.

The World Order of Baha'u'llah—By Shoghi Effendi.

The Golden Age of the Cause of Baha'u'llah—By Shoghi Effendi.

America and the Most Great Peace—By Shoghi Effendi.

The Dispensation of Baha'u'llah—By Shoghi Effendi.

The Unfoldment of World Civilization—By the Guardian of the Faith.

The Future World Commonwealth.

The Advent of Divine Justice.

## WRITINGS ON THE BAHĀ'I FAITH.

The Dawn-Breakers: Nabil's Narrative of the Early Days of the Baha'i Revelation—Translated by Shoghi Effendi.

A Traveller's Narrative—Translated by Edward G. Browne, M.A., M.B.

Baha'u'llah and the New Era—By J. E. Esslemont.

The Baha'i Proofs—By Mirza Abdu'l Fadl Gulpaygan.

The Promise of all Ages—By Christophil.

Security for a Failing World—By Stanwood Cobb.

Mysticism and the Baha'i Revelation—By Ruhi Afnan.

The Baha'i Revelation.—By Thornton Chase.

The Universal Religion—By Hippolyte Dreyfus.

Religions of the Empire—Edited by W. Loftus Hare.

A World Faith.

Baha'i: The Spirit of the Age—By Horace Holley.

The Drama of the Kingdom—By Mrs. Basil Hall.

The Coming of "The Glory"—By Florence E. Pinchon.

Lessons in Religion—By Shaykh Muhammad 'Ali Qa'ini, Translated by Edith Roohie Sanderson.

'Abdu'l-Baha's First Days in America—By Juliet Thompson.

Whence Comes the Light?—By Loulie A. Mathews.

My Pilgrimage to the Land of Desire.—By Marie A. Watson.

Divine Secret for Human Civilization—Edited by Josephine D. Storey.

Portals to Freedom.—By Howard Colby Ives.

#### PAMPHLETS.

The World Religion—A Symposium by Ten Contributors.

What is the Baha'i Faith?

Principles of the Baha'i Faith.

The Baha'i Faith—By Horace Holley.

Homoculture—By Stanwood Cobb.

The "Most Great Peace"—By Marion Holley.

The Oneness of Mankind—By Hussein Rabbani.

The Path to God—By Dorothy Baker.

The Baha'i House of Worship—By Genevieve L. Coy.

The Baha'i Movement.

#### OUTLINES AND GUIDES FOR BAHAI STUDY CLASSES.

Baha'i Study Course.

Twenty Lessons in Baha'i Administration.

Study Outline for Kitab-i-Iqan (Book of Certitude).

Study Guide for The Dawn-Breakers.

Baha'i Teachings on Economics.

Baha'i Lesson Outlines for Children.

#### PERIODICALS.

"World Order," American Magazine, Monthly.

The Baha'i World (Biennial International Record), Vol. VIII, 1938-40.

"Herald of the South," Australian Quarterly.

"Payambar," Monthly Magazine in Hindustani, Delhi.

# BAHA'I CENTRES IN INDIA

## National Spiritual Assembly :—

(Head-Quarters of the Baha'i Administration in India and Burma).

P. O. Box No. 19—New Delhi.

P. O. Box No. 19—Simla.

## Local Spiritual Assemblies :—

(Local Baha'i Administrative Centres).

BOMBAY :— Baha'i Hall, Krishna Bldg., Hornby Road, Bori Bunder.

CALCUTTA :— P. O. Box No. 8940.

DAIDANAW :— Baha'i Assembly, P. O. Kungyangoon.

DELHI :— Baha'i Assembly, Qarol Bagh.

HYDERABAD :— Baha'i Assembly, Hyderabad (Dn.)

KOTAH :— Baha'i Assembly, Kotah (Junc.)

KARACHI :— Baha'i Hall, Deepchand Ojha Rd., Garden Qrs.

MANDALAY :— 9/34th St.

POONA :— National Hotel, P. O. Box 8.

RANGOON :— P. O. No. 299.

Those who wish to come in closer contact with the Baha'is in India, may write to anyone of the above addresses.

**Baha'i Groups :—** Agra, Ahmedabad, Aligarh, Allahabad, Amritsar, Bangalore, Bikaner State, Bhawalpur State, Cawnpore, Deolali, Hyderabad (Sd.), Igatpuri, Kashmir, Lahore, Lucknow, Madras, Panchgani, Quetta, Simla, Surat, Toungoo (Burma), Tawnggyi (Burma).

# THE BAHÁ'Í WORLD—CENTRES

ABYSSINIA :—(Adis-Ababa.) ALBANIA :—(Tirane, Gjinokaster.)

AUSTRALIA :—(Adelaide, Brisbane, Melbourne, Perth, Sydney, Goldsborough.)

AUSTRIA :—(Vienna, Salzburg, Graz.) BELGIUM :—(Antwerp.)

BRAZIL :—(Bahia.)

BULGARIA :—(Plovdiv, Sofia, Turnovo, Varna, Bourgas, Dubnitsa.)

CAUCASUS :—(Baku, Bala-Khani, Batum, Burda, Chini, Darband, Erivan, Ganjih, Khilli, Kugchay, Naftalan, Petrovki, Saliyan, Shakki, Shamakhi, Shiravan, Tiflis.)

CHINA :—(Canton, Hong Kong, Shanghai.)

CZECHO-SLOVAKIA :—(Brno, Prague, Pressburg, Praha.)

DENMARK :—(Kopenhagen.)

EGYPT :—(Alexandria, Cairo, Port-Said, Tanta, Assiut, Fayom, Kantara.)

FRANCE :—(Seine, Paris, Lyon, Marseille, Vance.)

GERMANY :—(Berlin, Bremen, Dresden, Esslingen, Frankfurt, Goppingen, Hamburg, Heilbronn, Heidelberg, Heppenheim, Karlsruhe, Leipzig, Mannheim, Salsburg, Schwerin, Stuttgart, Warmemunde, Bambérg, Rostock.)

GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND :—(London, Cheshire, Bath, Blackburn, Bradford, Bournemouth, Broadstone, Bristol, Ireland, Surrey, Sussex, Hounslow, Essex, Manchester, Newcastle-on-Tyne, Northumberland, Devon, Kent, Southampton York, Birmingham, Bramhall, Totnes.)

HOLLAND :—(Brummen, Haarlem, Enschede.)

HUNGARY :—(Gyor, Budapest.)

IRAQ :—(Baghdad, Basra, Mosul, Karbila, Khaniqin, Basrih, Adhyabih.)

ISLANDS :—(Society Islands.)

ITALY :—(Florence, Rome, Livorno.)

JAPAN :—(Kobe, Kyoto, Tokyo, Yokohama, Hyogoken.)

JUGO-SLAVIA :—(Belgrade, Petrinja, Zagreb.)

LITHUANIA :—(Radviliskis, Yoniskis.)

NEW ZEALAND :—(Auckland, Nelson, Wellington, Yaninee.)

NORWAY :—(Fjosanger, Oslo.)

PALESTINE AND TRANSJORDANIA :—(Akka, Gaza, Haifa, Jaffa, Salt, Transjordania, Adasiyyih, Beershaba.)

PERSIA :—(Tihran, Abadih, Kashan, Kirman, Qazvin, Tabriz, Yazd, Isfahan, Shiraz, Hamadan, Birjand, Rasht, Ahvaz, Kirmanshah, Mashhad, Sangsar, Sari, Bandar-i-jaz.)

PHILIPPINES :—(Manila.) POLAND :—(Warsaw.) RHODESIA.

RUMANIA :—(Bucarest.) RUSSIA :—(Leningrad.)

SOUTH AFRICA :—(Heidelberg, Johannesburg, Pretoria, Cape Town.)

SUDAN :—(Darfur.) SWEDEN :—(Rammen, Stockholm, Uddevalla.)

SWITZERLAND :—(Zurich, Geneve, Lausanne, Tarasp.)

SYRIA :—(Aleppo, Alexandretta, Beirut, Damascus, Lebanon, Mersine.)

TUNISIA :—(Tunis.)

TURKEY :—(Adana, Istanbul, Izmir, Antep, Biridjik.)

TURKISTAN :—(Bukhara, Ishqabad, Marv, Samarqand, Tashkand.)

UNITED STATES AND CANADA :—(Arizona, California, Montreal, Vancouver, Colorado, Connecticut, Washington, Florida, Honolulu, Chicago, Illinois, Indiana, Maine, Baltimore, Boston, Massachusetts, Michigan, Minnesota, New Jersey, New York, Ohio, Portland, Pennsylvania, Wisconsin, Los Angeles, Oakland, Pasadena, San Francisco, New Haven, Miami, St. Augustine, Wilmette, Indianapolis, Kansas, Maryland, Worcester, Detroit, Flint, Minneapolis, Missouri, Newark, Buffalo, Cincinnati, Cleveland, Columbus, Philadelphia, Pittsburgh, Seattle.)

## THE HISTORY OF THE BAHĀ'I FAITH IN INDIA

The Bahā'i Faith was introduced into India, about seventy years ago, by Jamal Effendi, a well-known Bahā'i teacher from Iran, who was specially deputed by Bahā'u'llah, the Founder of the Bahā'i Faith, to visit India, on a teaching mission.

On his arrival in India, he came in contact with many well-known personages in different parts of this country and interested them in these universal teachings.

Among those in sympathy with his mission were the then Nizam of Hyderabad, Sir Salar Jung the Great, the Nawab of Rampur and many others.

Later, in the eighties of the last century, batches of Irani Bahā'i came and settled down in India; the object of their visit was the conquest not of the soil of India, but the hearts of the Indians. The weapon they used was not the sword of steel, but sweet and solid arguments, which implanted such indelible impressions, that many hearts were won, and the Indians began evincing great interest in this universal movement. It was during this time that one of these pioneer teachers interested His late Highness, Sir Sayaji Rao, the Gaikwad of Baroda.

Through the efforts of these Irani pioneers, the Bahā'i Faith is now firmly implanted in many big cities of India. They have spared no pains in diffusing this message. Their task has been uphill, for they had to leave their hearth and home and settle in India, a country foreign to them. The Indian language, culture and education being foreign to these immigrants, their progress was naturally slow and, therefore, results have not been spectacular: but these difficulties have steeled them to further action, whereby unity may be established in every sphere of life. Their success is evident by the fact that this message has reached you today.

The early believers of every religion have been hewers of wood and drawers of water. Yet posterity bows down before their holy names. The Bahā'i teachings meet the needs of this age, and the logical proofs of their validity have changed millions of hearts in every nook and corner of the globe. We invite you now to join hands with us and shoulder the responsibilities so that differences of race, religion, caste and creed may be annihilated and universal brotherhood may be established.

Those desiring further information with regard to the Bahā'i Movement may communicate with Mani H. M. Mehta, Bahā'i Hall, Bombay—1.

---

Published by MANI H. M. MEHTA, as the President of the Local Spiritual Assembly of the Bahā'is of Bombay, Bahā'i Hall, Krishna Building, Bori Bunder, Bombay, and printed by H. W. Smith, at The Times of India Press, Bombay.

## IMPORTANT DATES AND EVENTS.

**1817 A.D.** The Birth of Baha'u'llah (The Founder of Bahai Faith).

**1819 A.D.** The Birth of the Bab ("The Gate").

**1844 A.D.** The declaration of the Bab, (Who proclaimed His mission of heralding a mighty World-Educator,—one whom God shall make manifest).

**1844 A.D.** The Birth of 'Abdu'l Baha.

**1850 A.D.** The Martyrdom of the Bab. (He fell a victim of fanatical persecution and was publicly martyred by a military firing squad of 750 soldiers at Tabriz, Persia, 9th July 1850).

**1863 A.D.** The Declaration of Baha'u'llah. (On 21st April 1863, He declared that He was the long expected Educator and He was the Promised One of all the Prophets).

**1863-69** Baha'u'llah's letters to kings, advising them all to unite together or there would be terrible strife, if His Words be not heeded.

**1892 A.D.** Ascension of Baha'u'llah.

**1908 A.D.** Release of 'Abdu'l Baha from Akka (Palestine) Prison.

**1911 A.D.** Laying of the foundation stone of the Mashriqu'l Adhkar (the Baha'i Temple) by 'Abdu'l Baha near Chicago.

**1911-1914.** 'Abdu'l Baha's visit to France, Germany, England, America and Egypt.

**1921 A.D.** Ascension of 'Abdu'l Baha.

**1921 A.D.** Shoghi Effendi appointed First Guardian of the Bahai Faith.

PRESIDENT'S  
SECRETARIAT  
LIBRARY

